

A PLACE TO FEEL GOD

By Conrad C. Pitts

Edited in Prayer by
Ute Bonn and Christopher Quinn

A PLACE TO FEEL GOD
CONRAD C. PITTS

Copyright © 2015 by A Place to Feel God, Inc.,
an Alabama Non-Profit Corporation

All rights reserved. No copying in whole or in part
for commercial purposes without permission
of the copyright owner, which may be
granted upon written application.
aplacetofeelgod@gmail.com
www.aplacetofeelgod.com

At the suggestion of the Holy Spirit, this book
was originally printed in Jerusalem.

DEDICATION

This book is dedicated to God who rescued a sinner from his poor choices in so many amazing and sacred ways.

CONTENTS

	<i>Foreword</i>	1
	<i>Author's Note</i>	4
	<i>Opening Prayer</i>	7
	<i>Preface</i>	8
1	The Reason For This Book	23
2	There Is No Mystery	35
3	My Journey	41
4	Angels	55
5	Who Are We And Why Are We Here?	62
6	Freewill	77
7	Love And Faith	95
8	The Holy Spirit	112
9	Jesus And His Path	121
10	Lucifer's Tricks	143
11	Lucifer's False Realities	159
12	My Continuing Journey	168
	<i>Epilogue-A Place For All</i>	
	<i>Of God's Children</i>	182
	<i>Appendix of Angels</i>	185
	<i>Photographs</i>	189
	<i>Endnotes</i>	197
	<i>Works Cited</i>	230

FOREWORD

I first met Conrad Pitts more than a decade ago. At the time I was working very long hours at a large corporate law firm in Washington, D.C. and Conrad was a client. After working with him over several years, I came to understand that he was an intelligent, professionally accomplished, genteel, hardworking, Christian man who loved his family. Simply put, Conrad appeared to have everything most people in this world strive their whole lives to obtain.

More than seven years after our initial introduction, God brought Conrad and me together. His law firm and business needed my further professional help, and it would be necessary for me to temporarily relocate to his office. Although I did not understand it at the time, Conrad and I were each simultaneously experiencing the most painful periods of our lives. For the first time I began to notice that Conrad's persona – the mask that he wore each day – was slipping. Because I was immersed in my own pain, I did not see his. All I knew was that something was "wrong." The changes and inconsistencies that I began to notice in Conrad worried me. As I did not understand them or know what to do to help him, I prayed for him. The job I had been hired to do for him was almost completed, and I felt it was time for me to move on.

In 2007 during a consulting visit to Conrad's firm, I was summoned by a knock on my office door. It was Conrad, and he was out of breath. He explained to me that he had been praying and that the Archangel Michael wanted to speak with Conrad and me together. As someone who had also been blessed enough to have felt the presence of Angels, I shared Conrad's spiritual excitement. Sure enough, upon praying with my friend, the Archangel Michael indeed came. And with him this Heavenly Messenger brought the Grace of God, the unconditional love that I had been seeking my whole life. Michael lifted his hand and I was bathed in it. Heaven was here ... for me. With Conrad seated next to me, this Angel of the Lord proceeded to reveal

to me that my mission here on this earth is “to love.” It is the way in which I prayed to serve, and it is what God sent me here to do. For me, the fact that the Archangel Michael would meet with Conrad and me together to reveal this was confirmation that Conrad and I share in a “spiritual circle.” It was also validation of my complete trust in him.

I consider Conrad to be one of the most sincere people I have ever met. To be labeled a “sincere” person by another is virtuous praise for any person. When I say this about Conrad, such an observation is not simply one of character, but of spirit. While Conrad may be sincere, he was not always a man who sought God in his life. Oh yes, he was a “religious” Christian man when I met him and a Sunday school teacher, but as his story reveals, he had not yet sought to be “one” with God. Nor had I; nor have many. His prayers and his journey enabled my own similar transformation. For this I will always be grateful.

As Heaven has revealed to me that my mission is “to love,” I am striving hard to do so and to identify unconditional love when it is before me. What first struck me about *A Place to Feel God* is just how much love Conrad must have for God, his family, and each one of us to bare his soul and share the path that he walked to find his way home. Whether we realize it or not, *A Place to Feel God* is what we are all seeking in this world. The very title is a *double entendre*. It is both a physical place in the world where we can come together in prayer, and a place inside each of us. How do you know what God feels like, or that it is God you are feeling? Close your eyes and pray. Heaven will answer and you will know. Do not be afraid to embrace your answer.

Conrad’s story begins in a way that is common enough in our culture, a personal crisis. It is its “ending” that is not yet considered mainstream. At this time in his life when he was most afraid, Conrad held on to his love for another and prayed for Heaven’s intervention. God reached out His hand to Conrad and his family. Miraculously, Conrad overcame his fear and took it. In writing this book, he is now trying to teach others that God is holding out His hand to them, as He did for me. The specifics of Conrad’s story may be uniquely his own, but his journey is

one that can be made by every person. It is an important journey through self-discovery, and ultimately a discovery of the Holy Spirit, which is present within each of our hearts.

This world is filled with people who are seeking the path to God. How far we make it along that path depends upon many factors. Among those factors is the level of one's personal commitment. In making the personal choice to read *A Place to Feel God*, you are making a commitment to your own, incredible spiritual journey. The courage and faith it took for Conrad to share his personal story with the world will likely help you to contemplate, embark upon, or continue along your own path to being *one* with God.

The words from Heaven that are provided in these pages – God's answers to the prayers of His children – will most certainly bring the deep healing that comes with understanding. Through the heartache and the joy present in Conrad's journey, it is my hope that you will recognize that you are also on your path to knowing God and feeling His Grace. Whatever your race, African American like myself, Caucasian like Conrad, or any other race, creed, or color God made, *A Place to Feel God* is a gift from God. Remember, the journey back to our Father in Heaven is not a lonely one. We are never alone. God, Jesus Christ, and His Angels – the Holy Host of Heaven – are with us always.

Michele Lipscomb

AUTHOR'S NOTE

My name is Conrad Pitts and I am a corporate and tax lawyer living in the South. I have a remarkable story to tell that I know will be difficult to believe. This is why I am asking that you suspend your initial disbelief. To begin, I have worked as an attorney for over thirty years and never dreamed that I would be asked to write a book about God and His Heavenly Messengers. Furthermore, if another had written this book and I had read it, I would believe the author was crazy, delusional, on drugs, or had lost touch with reality. Thus, I expect you to initially think this of me. As an attorney, I have been trained to think logically, be skeptical, and, above all, be rational. As such, no one is more surprised than I to have experienced the amazing contacts with God and Heaven I detail in this book.

When I first began experiencing these events, I was incredibly skeptical myself. I was also scared the first time I encountered Heaven in an undeniable form. Many of us want to experience something tangible that is from God, but we often recoil in fear when that proof arrives. This happened to me. However, my fear disappeared and I lost my skepticism as I had more contact with Heaven. This is why I invite your skepticism and request that you be very critical and question everything I have written. Such skepticism is both a necessary and a normal part of each person's journey to find the truth. I am also mindful of the warnings about false prophets contained in the Bible. Therefore my request is that you not embrace these truths until you too have confirmation that they are from God.

I was very hesitant to write this book because I did not want the visibility that would come. I am by nature an introvert and just wanted to live my life in the shadows. I was motivated to write this book when I was told that I would remember for eternity what I did not do. I also got direct help from God that I describe in the Preface. Ask yourself, though, whether you would keep this information secret from your loved ones if you knew it was real and directly from God? I also know these truths

can be verified once you overcome the initial fear that is always present when one confronts something our culture believes is impossible.

If you choose to read this book, please keep in mind that I have written it from a Christian perspective because I was raised a Christian. As such, all of the information I have received has been filtered through my Christian frame. But I am not trying to start a new sect or convert anyone to Christianity. The concepts and information I have received are already part of most world religions. The difference is that each world religion has its own separate frame of reference. I have been told that God created the diversity we see in this world to help us learn something from each other. When each culture pushes past its fear and is able to learn from those cultures that are different, humanity will learn more of God's wisdom.

God is not a religion and all people here are God's children who came to serve Him by learning how to love. When our different cultures start looking for the similarities in each other's beliefs and stop focusing on the differences, then each culture will lift up the others. This is the way more of God's truth will be discovered by humanity. When we share our love with others without judgment or compulsion, God and His Heavenly Hosts will always come. This is why I am requesting that you take any truth you learn from either this book or your experiences with the Holy Spirit back to your place of worship. As we feel God's love, everyone will grow closer to Him together.

This book was necessarily written about my experiences and my life. As such, it would be easy to think of me as an egomaniac or at least egocentric and certainly self-absorbed. If you knew me, you would know that visibility is the last thing I want. But I was asked to write this book, and I accepted the task. Please do not project on to me any significance as a result of this request. I am a child of God just as you are and everyone is. Because we are all God's children, everyone is equal before Him. I have made many mistakes in my life and I have knowingly sinned before God. But I have come to realize that God never loved me any less for these transgressions. Either Jesus accomplished His

purpose on the Cross or He did not. I know He did and so Jesus has already atoned for my sins. This realization will set you free when you truly believe and accept God's love regardless of your belief system.

I have been told that the reason for this book is to give people hope that God is real and here for them too. It is only in the last 300 years or so that humanity has accepted that the experiences I detail in this book are impossible. As a corporate and tax attorney who has spent his entire adult life focused on money and greed (things that are "of this world" and not "of Heaven"), I can state we have been tricked by embracing cultural lessons that limit our ability to experience Heaven.

Finally, I want to confirm that I will receive no monetary gain from writing this book. I have transferred this book's copyright to a private charitable foundation where some of the profits from its sale will be used to purchase more books that will be distributed to those who otherwise could not afford them. Another portion of the profits will be used to translate the book into other languages. The record of all of the funds coming into and out of the private charitable foundation will be posted on the Internet at aplacetofeelgod.com. I have been taught that you should not profit monetarily from spreading the love of God. God's love cannot be bought or sold because it is always free for the asking.

Ask yourself why I would write this book if I am not gaining monetarily from this book, if I do not want fame or notoriety, and if I am not delusional, crazy, or on drugs? The answer is because God came into my life and showed me things I never dreamed were possible. The Holy Spirit then asked me to share my experiences with others. Now God is waiting for you to find Him in a manner that is perfect for you.

Go with God,

Conrad Pitts

Conrad C. Pitts

May 8, 2013

OPENING PRAYER

Luke 11:1-4: *And while he prayed in a certain place, as he was at peace, one of his disciples said to him, "Our Lord, teach us to pray, just as John taught his disciples." Jesus told him, "When you pray, this is what you shall say":*

*Our Father in heaven,
Hallowed is your name,
Your kingdom is come,
Your will is done,
In heaven as on earth.
Give us the bread that nourishes us every day.
And forgive us our sins,
For we too have forgiven all those who oppress us,
And so as we may not enter into temptation,
Except be delivered from the evil one.**

Matthew 6:7-13: *And when you pray, do not chant like the pagans, for they expect through babbling [through much words] they will be heard. Thus do not imitate them, for your Father knows what you will need, before you ask for it. Therefore, this is how you shall pray:*

*Our heavenly Father, hallowed is your name.
Your kingdom is come.
Your will is done,
As in heaven so also on earth.
Give us the bread for our daily need.
And leave us serene,
Just as we also allowed others serenity.
And do not pass us through trial,
Except separate us from the evil one.
For yours is the Kingdom,
The Power and the Glory,
To the end of the universe,
Of all the universes. Amen!*

*I have used the translation of the Ancient Aramaic New Testament by Victor N. Alexander because Archangel Michael has told me this translation is closest to the original meaning of scripture. This translation can be purchased at www.v-a.com.

PREFACE

A poor man cried and the Lord heard him.

Psalm 34:6

I am one of those referred to in Psalm 34:6. I cried out to the Lord and God came. As I said in the Author's Note, I am a corporate and tax lawyer with a very improbable story to tell. To become a tax lawyer, you go to law school for three years and then to a masters program for an additional year where the only subject is taxation. This means I have twenty years of formal education - twelve years in primary school, four years in college where I majored in philosophy, three years in law school, and finally one year in tax school where I received a Masters in Taxation degree. Despite this education, nothing I have been taught or read prepared me for how God would answer my prayers.

As an attorney, skepticism is an integral part of my job because I am always looking for inconsistencies in my search for the truth. I want my clients to tell me the truth but I am constantly verifying their accounts so that neither my clients nor I get embarrassed as the representation progresses. Therefore, when an attorney friend called me over seven years ago and said a "being" wanted to talk to me, I was automatically wary. Notwithstanding my fear, I went to the appointment because I trusted my friend. This book recounts what I have been taught on my journey since that first meeting. I have no agenda other than telling the truth. I am not starting a church or an organization so I am neither asking you to join something nor am I asking you to give me money. The only confirmation that what I am saying is true will be your getting closer to God in a manner that is perfect for you.

This book is necessarily my story, but the book is not about me nor should it be. The messages from Heaven are what are important and not what has happened to me as an individual. I am acutely aware there are many other people who appear better qualified than I am to bring forth these messages but the Holy

Spirit has asked me to write this book and I accepted the task. I am also aware of the many warnings concerning false prophets. This is why I am asking you to remain skeptical and embark on your own personal journey of discovery for verification. If what I am saying is true, you will discover God's truth on your own. I have arrived at my own conclusions after many thousands of hours of conversation with Angels in Heaven, witnessing people being miraculously healed, experiencing energy passing through me into others, feeling energy coming into me from others, and feeling energy come into me from the Holy Spirit. I have also been a witness to hundreds of conversations others have had with different Angels and the Holy Spirit. In this process, I have learned never to limit God with what I once believed was impossible. Some will say what I have experienced is from the dark – the occult, and I agree that the dark definitely exists. This is why Jesus left us with the fruits of the spirit so we can discern for ourselves whether the messages are from God or the other side. If you embark on your own journey, you will have to decide for yourself the source of this information.

I had my first encounter with Heaven in a form that was undeniable to me in February of 2006. Since that day, I have been in the physical presence of the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit, and a number of different Angels of the Lord.¹ All have appeared before me and their energy has passed through and around me. The grace and love I felt from Heaven in each case defies adequate explanation and their separate power and majesty are incapable of being expressed in words. It is because of these experiences that I am writing this book. But my request is that you focus on the messages themselves and not project anything on to me. If what I am saying is true, the Holy Spirit will validate the information that is here when you pray for confirmation.

The Lord asked me to share with you (and bear witness to) the experiences I have had with God and His Heavenly Messengers. Each day I pray that I can serve God completely because I am among those whom God and His Holy Messengers have appeared before in a tangible and undeniable form in this

world. But it is important to remember that the message of the Lord Christ to Thomas the apostle is equally applicable now. Those who are truly blessed are those who have not seen and yet whose faith stands before all. I can state that I was not among those people because I initially ran from God and was afraid. Now, I run to God and know that my Father in Heaven never left my side for a moment. I am a sinner who once judged others but was redeemed by the grace of God. I am that man who cried out in the night and the Lord heard and answered my prayer. By His grace, I now stand before you and bear witness to His love for us all.

It is impossible to capture the essence of my experiences solely using words because each person has to feel God's grace to verify this truth. But God's grace is available to all. God sent His Angels to me and, after I gathered the faith and courage to push through my initial fear, everything I had previously accepted as "real" paled when compared to feeling God's grace. No other explanations, no science, and no empirical inquiry can challenge for me (and those who have shared these experiences with me) what I have seen, felt, heard, and witnessed over the past seven years. God came and taught me that Heaven is always here when we create the conditions necessary for Heaven to be felt. As a result of these experiences, I now understand my life and have learned to live the majority of it without fear.² Where once I was frequently afraid, I am now filled with joy when I overcome my fear and allow myself to experience the true nature of God. This blessed life is available to you too when you summon the courage necessary to push through your own fear and choose to follow the path shown to us by *The Christ*. The Christ is the presence of God's love in this world and this love has been here through all time. When anyone reaches out in selfless love to help another, The Christ is always present because selfless love is the path to our Father in this world regardless of one's religious preference.

On my journey I have learned that blessings come from helping others selflessly because such work permits you to grow and experience God's grace. The conditions for Heaven to come are very simple – faith, no fear, and selfless love for another.

When these conditions are present, Heaven always comes. But I want to emphasize that it is not easy to learn to eliminate fear. This is why you should not give up just because you do not immediately feel the presence of the Holy Spirit.

One of the most difficult (but critical) areas of your development is learning to love yourself. This is the conundrum and challenge. You have to learn to love yourself while simultaneously demonstrating selfless love for others and not focusing your life on the self. In this quest, Jesus is an excellent role model as the path He walked (and demonstrated to us) is the path of God. During Jesus' life in this world, He showed us that His work was never about Him and yet He loved and regarded Himself because He understood that He was a part of God. If your life mirrors mine in any respect, you will have to tackle depression, self-doubt, loneliness, and self-recrimination along the path. While none of these emotions were positive, I had to face them in order to learn to overcome them. Because this world is not yet completely part of Heaven, your battle will continue until you have overcome everything that the dark has done to you. While you are suffering, it is difficult to realize that Heaven is always here. Your growth will come when you learn to hold onto Heaven in circumstances where you would not normally think Heaven could be present. Just look at how Jesus responded while He was on the Cross when He asked God to forgive those who were torturing Him.

During my journey, I have experienced God's healing energy and love pass through my body into others. I have also witnessed many miracles. On a regular basis, I travel with my friends to pray with others at a place in the mountains. These prayer sessions last from six to nine hours and during these times I have witnessed cancer cured, limbs straightened, addictions conquered, relationships healed, Crohn's disease eradicated, and depression lifted. Our culture teaches that healing is only achieved with expensive medications and highly technical and sophisticated medical procedures. If such technology does not exist for a certain problem or the drugs have not yet been

developed, we are taught nothing can be done. None of this is true. Healing is always available to those who turn in faith and prayer to God, who is the source of all power. While physical miracles are wonderful, the truly amazing miracles are the changes I have seen in people's lives when they realize that God has always loved them. Because I have seen so many miracles, there would be something wrong with me if I did not believe. But the miracles were not sent so I would believe. I was only privileged to witness these miracles after I developed my faith. Another lesson I have learned is that God rarely answers my prayers in the manner I anticipated, but God's answers have always exceeded my expectations. God is great and you can feel His love when you release your fear and turn your life over to Him.

Even though I have recently had undeniable and tangible contact from Heaven, I realize now that I had direct intervention from Heaven throughout my entire life. This revelation will be the same for you when you take the time to look. My first memories involving an Angel of the Lord are from when I was a young boy. This period was very difficult for me as my home life was challenging because my mother was sexually abusing me as she, herself, had been abused as a child.³ When I said my prayers each night and asked for God to help my family and me to heal, Archangel Raphael would sit with me and comfort me.⁴

When I was nine years old, my parents sent me to a summer camp located on the Tennessee River. One day I had a fight with a counselor and won. In retaliation, this counselor and two of his friends attacked me when I was near the river. One held me on the ground while the other two wrapped around my hands and feet one of the chains the camp used to secure its canoes. Once I was bound, these counselors threw me in the bottom of a canoe and paddled out into the Tennessee River. Because they only wanted to scare me, they placed a life jacket around my neck before they tossed me into the river. Their scheme backfired when the life jacket popped off and I sank to the bottom. My body remained there over fifteen minutes until I was found. When the counselors got me to shore, my heart had stopped and

I had ceased breathing. As my body was on the bottom of the river, my soul went into the light and I met Archangel Michael in Heaven. This magnificent Angel explained to me what had occurred and asked me if I wished to return to this world to serve God. I said yes because God had allowed me to see that I could help many whom I would come to know and love if I returned. It is reasonable to ask why anyone would leave the joy of Heaven to return to this world given its challenges and difficulties. The answer is simple yet it is the most powerful thing that exists – love for others. Once I made this decision, my still and lifeless body miraculously resuscitated itself because God placed my soul back inside my body. Interestingly though, when I returned to this world I had no remembrance of my experiences in Heaven until Archangel Michael reminded me of them almost fifty years later. All I remembered was being underwater and holding my breath as long as I could until I sucked water into my lungs and then blacked out. My next memory was of lying on the shore choking, spitting water out of my lungs, and gasping for air. This is an example of God saving me but then not letting my memory of Heaven alter my freewill in this life. I had more challenges to overcome before I was ready to experience Heaven in the manner I detail in this book.

As my life progressed, I channeled my fear and anger into sports and academics because I was using these outlets to escape my home environment and the pain I experienced when I allowed myself to feel. I had learned to distract myself rather than confront the real issues. In college I started to drink alcohol and this habit continued until I was 55 years of age. Although I appeared whole on the outside, I was inwardly broken and suffered from occasional bouts of depression that were so strong I contemplated taking my own life from time to time. I even purchased a pistol for this express purpose while in college. One of the reasons I had such a difficult time is that I never spoke to anyone about what had happened to me in my childhood. Because I had neither confronted the abuse I received from my mother nor forgiven her, I would only allow myself to love if I could control both my surroundings and the contact that I had

with those who were close to me. But Heaven reached me even in this artificial state every time I looked to God for His help and guidance.

One example of Heaven's contact occurred when I was at a crossroads in my life. After I finished college, I broke up with someone I loved and I was trying to determine whether or not I had made the right decision. While deep in prayer sitting alone in a Wyoming campground, I felt the Holy Spirit enter my body. In that instant, I was filled with God's grace and I experienced the joy that comes from feeling Heaven come. Tears rolled down my face because I knew I had received the answer to my prayer. I also experienced the gift of tongues⁵ as proof that something inexplicable and sacred had occurred. I had prayed for undeniable proof that my prayers had been answered and this gift was that proof. I would like to tell you I lived connected to Heaven after this sacred experience but that is not what occurred. It would take me a few more decades and much more direct intervention from Heaven before I would have total faith in God and trust Him completely.

During a period of great personal suffering a few years ago, God's Angels began to appear before me regularly. My qualification for such an intervention was simply that I cried out and God heard. I had built a life hiding my pain and fear through acquiring things with my material success as well as participating in athletics. I ended most days drinking a few glasses of wine⁶ because I believed I had earned the right to relax at the end of a tough day. However, my greed combined with a failing economy challenged all of my suppositions and illusions. This is when I could see myself and, worse, my family could start to see the looming problems I had created. Bankruptcy was a possibility and I was scared. It was then that I contemplated suicide because I had a large life insurance policy. Lucifer had tricked me into believing that leaving my family financially secure was the best way to love them. At the same time, though, I began to pray to God because I knew how much I had hurt my family. I prayed, "Lord, I love my family with all my heart and mind. Please help me honor them and use me as your vessel to bring to them your

love. I want to love them as You love me.”

Shortly after sending up that prayer, I received a call from a colleague who was a good friend of mine. Upon returning from a two-week business trip to London, this friend had come home to find his wife very ill. When he had left home she was a healthy mother raising a toddler and running a successful business. Upon his return, she would not eat, could not sleep, had bruises and scratches on her torso and upper legs, was periodically delusional, and suffered from periodic bursts of terror. She also began to blame him for things he never did. She was losing weight rapidly and had trouble living in reality. She often appeared to be discussing or reacting to events that had never taken place.⁷ My friend explained to me that he had taken his wife to doctors and counselors who said there was no professional help that would cure her. He believed something terrible had happened to her while he was away but he did not know what. He was distraught and did not know what to do. On one of his calls, I asked him if he still loved his wife. When he said he did, I advised him to “pray and forgive.” Little did I know what would come from those words. My selfless love for my friend provided the foundation for the Holy Spirit to speak through me. This selfless love also provided the Holy Spirit the opportunity to begin answering my prayers for my family.

I will now recount what both my friend and the Angels of the Lord have told me happened next. The day following our conversation, my friend climbed a mountain near his home in New Mexico that the Native Americans consider sacred. He chose this mountain because a Native American friend of his told him that he would find God there. After driving to almost 9,000 feet, he then embarked on foot and climbed for over two hours. He was angry because of what had happened to his wife and to him in this life. He decided to bypass a small alpine lake near the summit and came to a meadow that had a small stream running through it. When he reached the meadow, he sat down to rest and pray. At that moment, he believed his life would be over if his wife were to die or become estranged from him. He got on his knees and asked God to take his anger and allow him

to forgive those who had hurt his wife. Next, he asked God to forgive him for anything he had done that might have led to this place of grief and illness. Finally, he asked God to forgive his wife for anything she had done wrong. His selfless prayers allowed God the opportunity to give my friend the ability to forgive those responsible for this tragedy. Once he forgave those who had hurt his wife, he felt the anger and pain lift and was immediately at peace.

Next he asked God to take from him and give to his wife anything that was needed to heal her even if it meant he was to become sick. He also prayed that God give him any task that would result in her getting well regardless of the consequences. Finally, he prayed that regardless of whether his wife were to leave him, he wanted her to be healed and to know God's love. In so praying, his prayer was completely selfless because he was asking for nothing for himself. As he finished the last prayer, a great light appeared before him. Although the brightness of the light hurt his eyes, he could discern the figure of a man inside the light and then he heard that man's voice say, "*God has answered your prayers. Your wife is to be healed and you are to be the vessel for His love. Go to her.*" Immediately, a huge wave of energy passed from the figure in the light through my friend. This energy knocked him off his knees and he fell over backwards where he lay on the grass stunned and dizzy for a short time. When he sat up, the being of light and the energy surrounding this being's appearance were gone. Stunned, my friend got up, gathered his pack and walking staff, and ran down the mountain. By the time he reached his truck and began driving home, my friend started to doubt whether what he had experienced was real. By the time he had driven to the bottom of the mountain, he had convinced himself that he had been delusional because of his anxiety and the altitude. Just as my friend came to this conclusion, he felt someone push him hard on the back of his neck from the back seat. The force was strong enough to throw his chest against the steering wheel and set off the truck horn. Startled, my friend swerved and pulled over to the side of the road. At this point, his heart was pounding and tears were streaming down his face

because he was again overcome by the feeling he experienced in the Holy Spirit's presence on the mountain. Inside the truck, my friend heard the same voice that was on the mountain say, "*We are here and your prayers have been answered. Go to her and we will guide you. Listen to us, and your prayers will be answered. We are here and we are real. We bring the grace of God for we are His servants and are Angels of the Lord.*"

Still crying, my friend made his way home where he found his wife lying on the bed unable to move in any conscious fashion. He placed his hands over her and prayed exactly as the Holy Spirit had instructed him to do. He felt a rush of energy pass through him into her and for the first time in months she had a lucid moment. This was the beginning of her recovery. While it took two years, her health was completely restored just as the Holy Spirit foretold.

Shortly after my friend's experience on the mountain, he called me and said there was a being who was requesting to speak with me. Although my friend told me he did not understand what was happening to him or why this being wanted to talk to me, my friend said it was very important for me to come. Had I not known my conservative, Georgetown educated lawyer friend so well, I would not have believed him. However, because I knew that he was steady, practical, and raised in the Christian faith, I flew out to see what he was talking about. Just as my friend had said, a being I am now graced to know so well as Archangel Michael came and talked with me.

The Bible refers to people helping each other (and others) two by two.⁸ Because I was part of my friend's circle of love, the Holy Spirit had used me to help him pray for his wife. In return, God used my friend to bring to me the grace of God. Two by two do we come to know our Father! As more of us learn to love in this world, the conditions that bring Heaven here are spreading. On November 18, 2007, I was "chrismated" by Archangel Raphael at a time when I did not even understand that chrismation was once considered one of the most important sacraments. Now lost in the West, chrismation was the name given to describe the indwelling of the Holy Spirit in a person's

body after he or she had been baptized. Originally Jesus passed this sacrament to His apostles and disciples, and then they passed it along to other followers of The Way. The Way is how Jesus' followers initially referred to themselves. When I was blessed to have this experience, it felt as if I was being infused with a burst of loving energy.

When I committed to write this book, I was in God's direct presence. I was sitting in my office when my friend came into the room. We began to pray together and talk about God's love for this world. One of the gifts my friend was given on that mountain is the ability to understand when an Angel is about to appear and which Angel it is. Without warning, my friend announced that the Archangel Gabriel was coming and then my friend started to collapse. Gabriel immediately came and announced that God was here. At this point, a great wave of energy emanated from the part of the room where my friend had been standing. This energy was so great that it physically threw me back in my chair and I had to close my eyes because of its force. The voice of God then came to me and said three sentences very clearly three times. While I was not frightened, I was so overwhelmed by the power of God's presence that I can only remember God saying, *"My words shall be heard from the mountains to the oceans throughout this world."* Once God stopped speaking, the great energy that had pinned me against my chair dissipated. I slowly opened my eyes and saw my friend lying unconscious and paralyzed on the floor. At first I thought he might be dead but after I prayed over him for a long time, I saw his eyelids move. When he finally regained consciousness, he had no memory of what had just happened.

Trying to describe what I felt and experienced other than what I have written above is difficult because being in the direct presence of God is beyond my capacity to describe. I now know, though, that God exists and can communicate directly if He wants to just as He did over 2,000 years ago. What I experienced is very similar to what is described in the Bible. At first, I did not understand what God's words meant and initially thought God's words were a command because I was having extreme

difficulty deciding whether to write this book before God came. Now I know God's words were words of comfort rather than a command. Part of my resistance to writing this book was that I did not (and still do not) feel worthy to convey God's messages. God's undeniable communication to me was to let me know that this was not my responsibility or worry because the words and experiences in this book have been given to me from the Holy Spirit and are from God. As such, God will be responsible for how this book reaches the world as well as its effect. But I want to be clear that what I describe in this book has been filtered through my frame of reference. This is why two people can witness the same event and yet have entirely different understandings of what they just heard or saw. We see this at work in the differing narratives of the same event contained in the Synoptic Gospels. As Archangel Michael has explained to me, it is important to understand that God always allows His messages to be filtered through the frames of those who hear Him. This means I have interpreted God's messages through my frame of reference. This bit of information explains why everyone's experience with God is different. What each person experiences is what that person needs or can understand at that particular moment. God is not a template because no two people are alike. When God spoke to me, I had no fear and so I describe my experience without fear. If I had been afraid, I would have recorded God as fearful just as the Old Testament records the experiences of those who were afraid when God came. I have been told though that their fear was not a fear of God as much as a fear of the unknown and the unknowable.⁹ God's power is so great that, when you are in His direct presence, fear of what may happen is inevitable unless you have total faith in His love. While I had no fear of God, I did create fear of the process and fear of what I would have to endure from those who would oppose me (including my loved ones) as I tried to get where God would have me be. I also allowed myself to engage in self-judgment that was coupled with an absence of understanding. I emphasize these points so you will know this book records *my understanding* at the time the messages were sent to me through God's Holy Messengers.

Jesus made it clear, though, that neither this world nor the process ever limits the feelings you will experience from the Holy Spirit when you understand Heaven's message. Finally, please realize there is always a clear distinction between God and those who interpret God's messages. Atheists frequently make the mistake of judging God by the acts of those who say they are working on His behalf.

The next time I spoke with Archangel Michael after my direct encounter with God, I asked Michael to allow me to feel the fruits of the spirit since I had been overwhelmed by God's power. In answer to my request, Michael took me out of my body and to Heaven where I was filled with God's love and experienced total peace. After I had been in Heaven for a while "flying," Archangel Michael told me that he needed to bring me back due to my love for my family and what remained to be done. Now I can feel Heaven whenever I want if I close my eyes and pray to feel God's love because the Holy Spirit comes every time.

My experiences have taught me that God is here and in total control. All anyone needs to feel God's presence is to have faith in God and follow the rules Jesus left regardless of one's religious affiliation. This means if you pray to God for healing, God will direct His Angels to answer your prayer in the manner that is consistent with all of your prayers. Whereas Lucifer's tricks can temporarily bruise a soul, God's grace provides complete restoration. God is a Father to all of His children, and His grace is available to all. But it is important to realize that all here are on their own personal journey to learn about God's love. This is why there is no template. The manner in which your prayers are answered is up to God and no two prayers are ever answered the same way even if they are the same prayer.

It has been interesting for me to watch how people who know me respond to my telling them I talk to Angels and then asking them if they want to too. Those I thought would leap at the opportunity to talk to an Angel have generally said no. Some would say it is fine for you but it is not for me, others would

believe it was impossible and that I was weird, and some have since avoided me completely. Alternatively, others I thought would never be interested have seized the opportunity and their lives have been changed as a result. While fear is always present in those who said no, I do not think it is fear of the Angels as much as fear of change because it is almost impossible to directly talk to an Angel of the Lord without your life being altered.

Fear of unknowns is a theme that was written into the script of the movie *Finding Forrester*. In this movie, William Forrester asks Jamal Wallace what people are most afraid of but Jamal does not know the answer. Mr. Forrester then explains to him people are afraid of those things they do not understand. Mr. Forrester then says that once fear comes, people instinctively rely on their faulty assumptions. This is Lucifer's trick to keep us stuck. There can be no growth until we challenge the very assumptions that have put us where we are. The Angels are here to help us confront those assumptions that are wrong so we can receive answers to our prayers. Jesus did the same thing during His time in this world. In retrospect, we can see how the Pharisees and the Sadducees were lost because of the way they had been interpreting the Law. Jesus came to challenge their assumptions in order to help them. But they were so stuck in their faulty beliefs and so reluctant and fearful to change, they decided to remove the One who came to bring them deliverance from their suffering. Change is never easy. Yet change is critical if we are to restore this world to what God intended it to be.

This book was written as an answer to my prayers and is intended to challenge our culture's faulty assumptions that are keeping us in pain. The purpose of the book is to provide God's children with a new frame of reference based upon what is actually real so we quit looking to the lies our culture has accepted as the truth. If used correctly, this book is a roadmap to Heaven. The Holy Spirit has edited the concepts in this book because the words are from God and are meant to provide all of God's children with hope and understanding.¹⁰ No one has anything to fear from God or His Heavenly Messengers. God

created every soul and God wants each person to return home to Him. But, because freewill is integral to the process, neither fear nor compulsion can be part of the journey or you would not have freewill.

I initially wrote this book for my family because it began as an answer to my prayers for them. Now, however, this book has been expanded in a manner that I hope will reach all of God's children. It is not just my story of a life resurrected by the grace of God, but a parable. I pray that you will find God standing with you and holding you just as I have. When you do, you will understand that you are "a place to feel God" for eternity. My prayer is that you learn to recognize the feeling of the Holy Spirit's presence that is within you. The Holy Spirit is always with you, but we have conditioned ourselves not to feel the Holy Spirit's presence. The challenge is to overcome your fear of feeling and then trust those feelings that God sends when you have found His love in this world. This is the path of The Christ and is available to all.

1

THE REASON FOR THIS BOOK

Proclaim my son. There is but one God. He is love and compassion. He sent a son, Jesus, who descended from Heaven into the body of Mary through the grace of God and the means of the Holy Spirit. Through Him, came the grace of God and His love for His children. He loves us all.

Proclaim, you are witness and prophet¹¹ to the coming of The Christ. The time is rapidly upon us. The beginning is upon us. His will be done my son, His will be done.

Proclaim, and We will come. For We are here now.

Archangel Michael

Archangel Michael sent me this message at a time when I was unable to understand its import, but I do now. This message is from Archangel Michael, the Angel God has placed in charge of this world. I know that “second coming” is a fear inducing term in our society and this book was written to eliminate that fear. I have been told the second coming of Jesus is the solution and not the problem. In fact, Archangel Michael specifically told me, “*These times are the beginning of something new and wonderful and not the end.*”

This book is my story and contains my understanding of the wisdom the Holy Spirit has asked me to share with God's children. It is a story of God's unconditional love for all in this world. Archangel Michael told me that my life is a parable and this book chronicles my journey. If you look at my story that way, you will understand that God is waiting for you to find Him just as I have. In order to survive, Lucifer must induce fear and divide us because the dark cannot abide in the light. Contrast Lucifer's state with the uniting power of God's light and love. This is why there is no fear in God. But while we are in this world, we can choose to be influenced by either God or Lucifer and we frequently move between the two multiple times each day. This is why there is no stasis while we are in this world. Each of our thoughts and actions either moves us toward God and the light or toward the dark and away from the light. This is why we are constantly "in battle" while we are here. The dark never tires in its attempt to entice us away from God and this is the challenge. My friend once asked Archangel Raphael when this continual test would end. Raphael replied by asking, "*Are you still breathing?*" This is the world we live in and we will forever be confronted with these choices while in a body as long as the world remains in its current form.

I know there have been many people before me who have communicated this message without proof that others can see, feel, or experience for themselves. That is why God has provided me with some of the wisdom of Heaven as proof. But I am not asking that you take my word for anything because you should question everything I say. God expects this and Jesus warned people to be cautious when seeking God. God also warned us about false prophets because many have used their false prophecies and impure intent to attain personal objectives even though such behavior is not close to God. In order to guard against this, the Holy Spirit has suggested that I not receive any direct or indirect compensation from writing about or describing that which I have experienced or received from God. Furthermore, if

what I am saying is true, this truth will be confirmed when you pray and experience for yourself some of the fruits of the spirit as detailed in the Bible at Galatians 5:22-23.¹² The dark can trick you into believing that certain things are of God when they are not, but the dark cannot duplicate the feeling of God's and the Holy Spirit's¹³ presence. You will know you have found the truth brought to you by God when you feel God's presence in one of the following forms: *love, joy, peace, compassion, fulfillment, grace, faith, gentleness, or hope*. Lucifer is not capable of bringing any of these feelings to you because he lives in a world controlled and dictated by fear.

This book is a proclamation that is part of God's readying the world for Jesus' visible return. As such, it contains God's wisdom brought to me by His Holy Angels. The next step will be your discerning for yourself whether what I am saying is true. If you decide that I am telling the truth, then you will prepare yourself for that day by experiencing for yourself what I have personally experienced and describe in this book. God reveals Himself in many ways.¹⁴ One of these ways is through words and another is through your experiencing the feeling of His presence. As Archangel Michael has told me, "*People here, with Lucifer's help, have made their relationship with God complicated. It is not! God has always been here, but people have shut Him out. God sent The Christ to show humanity how to live while in this world, but His lessons have been largely ignored in practice.*" You must learn to feel God's presence for yourself. That experience will be your touchstone that God's truth is before you and you are on the path. Your intellect can be tricked but the dark can never duplicate the feeling of God's presence. As Obi-Wan says in *Star Wars*, "Luke, trust your feelings!"

Now is the time for everyone to return to that which is real and that which is of God. This is a journey I have undertaken because of God's grace. Your own personal journey is up to you. Please understand that I am not trying to replace anyone's religion. Rather, the wisdom from God that fills these pages will

close some of the gaps within the separate religious belief systems we in this world have created. The core beliefs of each of the Abrahamic religions are correct - there is one God, our Creator, who is served by more Angels than we can count. However, I know that all who seek God will find Him regardless of whether they are religious or not. My request, though, is that the wisdom God has asked me to share be taken to your churches or places of worship. In this way, all religious institutions will be elevated as their members move closer to God together. Jesus came to unite all in service to God. But since the time Jesus walked this earth, the dark has tricked us into judging and separating ourselves so that we are unwittingly living as the Pharisees and Sadducees once did. Our spiritual state becomes obvious when we ask ourselves whether Jesus would be pleased with how His word and works are being taught and used today. Therefore our mission should be to duplicate and finish the work Jesus started. This work can only be accomplished if we unite together in love and service to others.

In order for the revelations in this book to have the impact on you they are having on me, you must begin by challenging your own frame of reference. If you bring to your journey the frame of reference that our culture has taught you, then you will never understand this world. Richard Bach explored this concept in two of his books - *Jonathan Livingston Seagull*¹⁵ and *Illusions: The Adventures of a Reluctant Messiah*.¹⁶ In both of these books, Mr. Bach's principal characters advanced by escaping from the limits they had been taught to embrace by their cultures. Mr. Bach was correct with the metaphors he chose to use because if you are to learn how to move closer to God in this world, you have to challenge the accepted frames of reference that are used to either distract you from or diminish your experiences with Heaven.

God has given us what we need to find Him, but most of us have been tricked by the dark so we limit our ability to experience God in His fullness. Just as in *Jonathan Livingston*

Seagull, you must become that seagull who reached beyond what he was told was possible. Once you release yourself from both your past prejudices and your unwittingly self-imposed limitations, you will find realities you never dreamed were there. There is so much more to this world¹⁷ than meets our collective, post-Enlightenment and Empiricist eye. But first you will have to overcome your fear of change and look at your life. As Archangel Michael has told me, “*The two things that separate everyone from unlimited possibilities are fear and certainty in ideas and concepts that are not true.*” I am learning to never limit God as I reject those false convictions I once held.

Think about what the accepted norm is in our post Age of Enlightenment state.¹⁸ We have been taught that reason and science are the exclusive means to acquire the knowledge we need for our own advancement. Intertwined in this belief has been empiricism.¹⁹ These concepts have led our culture to believe that God does not exist because we cannot see, touch, or examine Him under a microscope. The problem with this approach is that we only know God in this world through faith.²⁰ God’s work surrounds us but we do not see God. Everything that occurs naturally in this world is God’s handiwork but we take it for granted because we are used to it. All of the sciences study a small part of what God has done. Biology at the cellular level, chemistry and physics from the subatomic level up, particle physics confirming the Higgs field (the God particle), astronomy studying celestial objects, etc. All of these disciplines study a small part of God’s creation. It does not matter whether we study our solar system to understand why everything has to be as it is for this world to support life or study our human bodies and marvel that we are the product of one sperm joining with one egg. None of this is random. Notwithstanding our pride and arrogance, we have not begun to fully understand any part of what is before us and yet we take it all for granted. Archangel Raphael recently told me that our understanding and appreciation of God should begin when we reach the end of our knowledge and then

watch what God does.²¹ We have been tricked into stopping our inquiry at the point our knowledge ends. This is why faith is a critical component to use in our quest to find God. We have to understand that God is always here and is always waiting for us to invite Him into our lives. When this happens, God will show us the unlimited possibilities He alone sees.

The Holy Spirit has told me there is nothing intrinsically wrong with reason or science. We just need to realize that these disciplines cannot be the frames of reference used to find God because they are too limiting. Take just the example of life itself. We do not know how life gets inside a body when an egg and sperm meet nor do we know where that life goes when the body returns to dirt. We only know it happens. This is why Jesus told us we have to be “*born from above*”²² and “*born of the Spirit*.”²³ In our current manifestation, we will never understand God or find Him by using science coupled with our power of reason. Yet our culture has embraced these limitations since the Age of Enlightenment. Although God exists, many believe that He does not because there is no tangible proof of His existence that science recognizes. The purpose of this book is to help you change your frame of reference so you no longer accept these artificial limitations. Once you suspend your disbelief and ask to feel the presence of the Holy Spirit (the existence of which science could never prove), then you are on your way to experiencing God.

The Holy Spirit has explained to me that a piece of God is in everything that has life but we do not see this miracle because of our conditioning. Archangel Michael once told me that he marvels each time he looks at a seed in his hand. We need to reflect on that statement and contemplate how much we have been tricked. Michael is not constrained by our limitations and really understands how God has designed a seed. Yet we see a seed as just a seed. This is just one example of how our culture’s current “state of consciousness” goes unchallenged notwithstanding the miracles²⁴ that each of us sees and takes for

granted everyday. This frame of reference explains how we have been fooled into believing things that are simply not true. This is the frame of reference that you must challenge if you are to find God and experience Him as I have.

Let me illustrate what I mean by relating to you a recent experience I had. I was on a flight that connected through Cincinnati, Ohio. I began the trip in the Central Time Zone and “knew” that Cincinnati was in the same time zone even though it is actually in the Eastern Time Zone. After I landed in Cincinnati, I saw several clocks in the terminal that showed me the time was one hour ahead of what I thought it was. But because I “knew” Cincinnati was in the Central Time Zone, I believed these clocks were wrong. Given my frame of reference, no amount of objective indicia to the contrary changed my mind until an airline representative called my name over the public address system to alert me that I was about to miss my next flight. I am sure most have had a similar experience. If you think you know something, you will fight to retain that knowledge even when everything demonstrates to you that it is not true. This is how our collective “wisdom” has been perverted through these last few centuries.

As Archangel Raphael has told me, “*Lies upon lies are now accepted as facts.*” I will restate what I said above because you cannot hear it too often. You must challenge the frames of reference you have been taught by our culture if you are to fully experience God while you are in this world. God is here and is waiting for you, but you must use your freewill to ask Him to reveal Himself to you in ways you never dreamed possible. Your confirmation will be the feeling of His presence when you create a state of being that is compatible with Heaven’s. The dark cannot duplicate this feeling. This is the reason the dark has worked so hard to convince us that our feelings are unreliable. The dark can trick our intellect but Lucifer can never duplicate the feelings that come from God. The Bible describes these feelings as the fruit of the Spirit and they can be found at Galatians 5:22-23.²⁵

You will never feel love, joy, peace, compassion, or fulfillment in the dark's presence or while doing the dark's bidding. As my friend once jokingly said, "I never heard anyone say, 'Let's go get drunk and then help some poor people.'"

I believe everyone wants what is "real." However, the problems come when what is real is different from what we believe it to be. I never expected that I would know how Copernicus or Galileo felt toward the end of their time here in flesh, but I do now. Let us review history for a moment. Nicolaus Copernicus, who was born in 1473 A.D. and died in 1543 A.D., is given credit for being the first astronomer to discover that the Earth is not the center of the universe (called heliocentric cosmology because "helio" means sun). He published this information in 1543, the year of his death, in a book entitled *On the Revolutions of the Celestial Spheres (De revolutionibus)*. Copernicus waited to publish this book until the end of his life because he was concerned about how his theory would be received by the powers of his day.²⁶

Galileo Galilei was born in 1564 A.D. and died in 1642 A.D. During his lifetime, he made improvements to the telescope and his observations supported Copernicus's theory that the Earth was not the center of the universe. However, Galileo was forced by the Catholic Church to recant heliocentric cosmology and he spent the final years of his life under house arrest.²⁷ Why was Copernicus afraid to publish his theory, and why was Galileo put under house arrest? Because what these men knew to be the truth (that which is "real") was materially different from the collective beliefs of their time. They also knew that those who held wrong beliefs would fight anyone who brought them the truth. This is just one example of how the dark continually tricks us to protect itself. The dark knows that change²⁸ is one of the most fearful things we will ever encounter and yet it is the only thing that will release us from our current state of being lost. This is the reason for this book.

The concerns Copernicus and Galileo had I understand

because God has shown me a small portion of the truth about how this world operates, who is here, and why God has allowed it to exist in its present form. This is the information contained in this book because God has asked me to share it with the world. But this knowledge is not consistent with many factually incorrect beliefs that many will fight to retain. The challenge is to accept that the knowledge God has given to me by His Angels is just as “real” as the theory put forth by Copernicus and Galileo. You too will know it is true if you follow the same steps I did to get where I am now. My journey is one that everyone can take because each of us is a child of God. All you have to do is overcome (or just suspend) your fear to change and begin. Along the way you will find the truth and your life will change just as mine has. All you will lose are the illusions you have created for yourself that have kept you from fully experiencing God while in this world.

If you think this knowledge and my experiences are from the “dark,” I would ask you to test the fruits of these messages. At Matthew 7:15-20, Jesus warned believers to test the spirit.²⁹ I welcome such a test because the wisdom that is contained in this book is from God. Archangel Michael has told me, *“There are three questions that must be answered at the beginning of each person’s spiritual journey: 1) Is what you feel real?; 2) If so, which side is it on – God’s or Lucifer’s?; and 3) once you decide it is from God, what are you going to do with your life now that you have this knowledge?”* Our time here in flesh is short and, therefore, procrastination has its own consequences. It is my prayer that you will choose God and be prepared to receive His peace and permit His love to envelop both you and those you love as they follow your example.

We are all familiar with the many references in the Bible to God and Angels speaking to people.³⁰ When I was growing up, I never had a problem believing that those events happened a long time ago to people very distant and different from me. What I never expected was that God’s grace would be revealed to me in

a similar manner. I also never conceived that I would be asked by the Holy Spirit to write about my experiences. Such is the power of God. God's Angels are here and they have always been here. They are not mythical creatures that exist only as figments of our imagination. Rather, they are magnificent beings created by God who are here acting as His agents to help, guide, and protect us. They are beautiful for they are a reflection of the love God brings to this Earth for us and for our salvation.

Jesus Christ told us the Holy Spirit would guide us until His return. Look at His words as recorded in John 16:7-15: *But I am telling you the truth, it will benefit you that I am going. For if I do not go, the Advocate [Holy Spirit] will not come to you. For when I go, I will send Him to you. And when He comes, He shall instruct the people on sin, righteousness and judgment; On sin since they did not believe in me; On righteousness, since as I go to my Father and you will not see me again; On judgment, since the leader of the world here was judged. Again, I have much to tell you, except you cannot take it all in now. But when the Spirit of Truth comes, He will provide you with all the truth, not that He speaks of his own self; except He speaks only what He hears, revealing to you the forthcoming events. And He glorifies me, since He manifests what is mine and reveals it to you.*

The Holy Spirit has guided me and has revealed God's grace and words to me. I am listening. I humbly pray that you listen too because His Angels are here as prophesied and are waiting for you to invite them into your life. A belief in a personal and present God surrounded by His Angels conflicts with much that we have been taught since the Age of Enlightenment. This truth also conflicts with the principles brought to us by the Empiricists. We have been taught by the best and brightest among us that the experiences described by Christian mystics never happened because their experiences could not be independently verified or replicated. Skeptics say these mystics fabricated their stories, were on mind-altering substances, or were otherwise deluded. I am not vouching for every experience described by mystics,

but I do know God has unlimited capabilities and will reach each person in the manner each person prays to be reached. This is how institutions unwittingly restrict access to God when they teach there are only certain types of experiences that are valid or appropriate. My suggestion is that you not limit your experiences with God by using any preconceived notions as to how God works. If you reach beyond what you think is possible, I can assure you God will surprise you!

Many people have come to accept that events of prophesy and signs of God's power never really happened. This belief is wrong too. However, I do not expect you to believe at first what I have said. It has taken me many years of direct contact with Angels and the revelation of more signs of God's power than I can recount to get me to this point. I can also definitely state that my journey has not been an easy one. As Archangel Raphael told me, "*Seeking God in this world is the most dangerous journey you can take because you will be attacked continuously.*" I can personally attest to this. But once you make it through the gauntlet Lucifer sends your way, the fruits of the Holy Spirit as described in Galatians 5:22 await you: "*love, joy, peace, compassion, fulfillment, grace, faith, gentleness, hope.*"

On your own journey, I encourage you to question what you begin to experience just as I once did. I have learned that Angels have extreme patience and always reveal the truth. They know each of us intimately through God and, in knowing us intimately as His children, they know where each of us is at every moment. This is because God's Holy Host of Angels is the Holy Spirit.³¹

Another important lesson I have been taught is that each person has his or her own special and personal relationship with God. Please keep this concept in mind because your experience with God and His Holy Spirit will necessarily be different from mine because your prayers are different. But the Holy Spirit will guide you when you learn to let go and find your true faith in God. The feeling of the Holy Spirit's presence will confirm your entrance into the state of being that is Heaven. It may be only an

instant at first but you will know. The challenge is to constantly take yourself back to that state. This is what Jesus showed us was possible and why he described Himself as the Son of Man. He came to be our example so we would know how to live in this world.

2

THERE IS NO MYSTERY

There is no mystery as to God, The Christ, or Us (the Angels). Why would God wish to be hidden or cryptic? Why would He have sent The Christ but to illuminate all? Why would We not appear all over this world to all of His children as He ordained it to be when We were sent to this world at its inception?

God is not hidden or cryptic but all around us. The Christ was sent to illuminate the world and all in it to the great love of God. We are here. Let no man or woman be confused. God is love, forever. All of His children were born of this love and it infuses them. It is life, itself. It is forever as are they, for they are part of Him. When all of His children grasp this, then this will be Heaven again. No confusion.

Archangel Michael

God has revealed Himself to me, and the peace, wonder, and joy I experience in His presence and the presence of His Heavenly Angels are meant for all of God's children. Most people in this world are not experiencing these feelings because their expectations have been twisted. People either no longer believe in God, or they have unwittingly limited their experiences with God because of what they have been taught. Each person's relationship with God is personal and unique. This is why there can be no template because no two people will have the same relationship with God. On your

personal journey, every thought, decision, or action will either move you toward or away from God every instant. As Archangel Raphael has told me, “*There is no stasis in this world.*” This book contains information God has given to me to help you reject your frames of reference that are not of Him. Only then will you be able to experience the fullness of God as the Holy Spirit reveals God to you. The problems we see in this world and in our lives show us that our current understandings and beliefs do not work. We have been tricked into establishing systems that are not consistent with God’s principles. God has shared some of His wisdom with me to help us create systems that will work for everyone rather than a select few.

The quote set forth above is from Archangel Michael³² and his words are clear. In two paragraphs Archangel Michael has explained this world and our position in it in relation to God, The Christ, and the Angels. God cannot be “*love, forever*” if He does not exist. Philosophers and theologians throughout history have written volumes about their understanding of God and this world. They were and are men and women who experienced and experience God in many different ways. God has not changed, but the times have.

I was asked to write this book to communicate my understanding of God’s wisdom as revealed to me through the Holy Spirit by God’s grace. This information is underpinned by the teachings of Jesus Christ and is a roadmap to Heaven. God wants His children to hear and understand the wisdom the Holy Spirit is imparting so each of us can adopt a new “way of being” that will replace the lies we have accepted as fact. As Archangel Michael has told me, “*These times are the beginning of something new and wonderful and not the end.*”

To understand this world and our relationship to God while we are here, Archangel Michael has explained to me, “*All things must be viewed through seven frames of reference. First and foremost, God is love, forever, as illuminated by The Christ. Second, those in flesh are immortal beings created by God.*

Third, each person has been given freewill that he or she uses every instant to move closer to or further from God. Fourth, this world is not only a moment in time, but mere illusion.³³ Fifth, Heaven is here every moment. Sixth, God's Angels walk among and with us. Seventh, Lucifer, other 'fallen Angels,' and souls who are 'demons' [lost children of God] exist and participate in this world."³⁴ Once these seven concepts are understood, this world and all that occurs here will make sense. This book has been written to begin to explain these concepts because God's plan is perfect and always has been. But Lucifer has worked very hard to trick us into using our freewill to reject (or not see) the things of God that surround us. I have been asked to shine God's light and wisdom into the darkness that has been created by Lucifer's lies, manipulation, and twisting of our freewill. We have forgotten that we are God's children and were created by Him as immortal beings of light. C.S. Lewis touched on this in *The Weight of Glory*³⁵ when he said:

There are no ordinary people. We have never talked to a mere mortal. Nations, cultures, arts, civilizations – these are mortal, and their life is to ours as the life of a gnat. But it is immortals whom we joke with, work with, marry, snub, and exploit – immortal horrors or everlasting splendours. This does not mean that we are to be perpetually solemn. We must play. But our merriment must be of the kind (and it is, in fact, the merriest kind), which exists between people who have, from the outset, taken each other seriously – no flippancy, no superiority, no presumption. And our charity must be real and costly love, with deep feelings for sin in spite of which we love the sinners – no mere tolerance, or indulgence which parodies love as flippancy parodies merriment. Next to the Blessed Sacrament itself, your neighbor is the holiest object presented to your senses.³⁶

Your soul will never die because you are a being of light

and immortal. Your body will pass away but your soul will live forever. This is why the Angels say that our time in this world is just “*an illusion and a mere moment in time.*” Virtually all have wondered why they are here. The Holy Spirit has told me that each person chose to come here to learn how to love. The reason souls have to come by choice is because God will not violate another’s freewill. Clearly God could, but this is a rule God has made for Himself. Also, freewill is the reason each of us is a unique and distinct individual.

An Angel (who was “Simon the Leper” when last in this world) has told me that each person is the sum and substance of every decision that person has ever made. In Heaven, there is perfect communication even with yourself. This means in Heaven you remember every decision you ever made because your collective decisions make you who you are.³⁷ But in this world, God has ordained that we come here without a memory of our past. We only bring our morality and our personality. This is why your conscience reflects your past decisions even though you do not know or understand that. What better place to learn to love than a war zone where you know you will be attacked by forces opposed to God? When you learn to love and forgive those who hurt you or your loved ones, you make a quantum leap toward God, the architect of love. Look at the examples Jesus left us to follow that are reflected in His life and His choices. Also, when one embraces unconditional love, any disease that has harmed a body wracked by fear begins to heal. This is God’s perfect love at work.

Before we came, we were shown by God whether we would come as a male or female and the family we were going to join. What we were not shown is exactly what would happen to us once we arrived because only God is omniscient. The real question though is why would anyone come here at all? Why do so many people want to leave Heaven and come to this world knowing its risks, temptations, and sorrows? The answer is that this world gives each of us the opportunity to move closer to God

in a very short time through the choices each make while here. These choices include forgiving ourselves for sins we commit as well as forgiving those who accidentally or intentionally injure either those we love or ourselves. Because this ability to forgive is only possible when we learn how to love, we move closer to God as we acquire this ability.

This world consists of souls who are at vastly different levels of development. It is this very environment that allows us to have experiences that are not possible in Heaven. Some people are acting very close to God while others are acting further from Him. This is why there is the risk that some people may move further away from God in the process of meeting the challenges of this world. But all of us knew these risks before we chose to come here. Archangel Michael explained this to me when he described all here as *“warriors for God who came here to confront that which is far from Him. There are no victims.”* This is also why it is important to understand that we are more than just our earthly bodies. Biologists and scientists agree that our bodies are composed of matter or in the unmatched words of Archangel Raphael, our bodies are *“just dirt.”* This means that, before we chose to come here, we knew God could heal our souls from anything that was done to our earthly bodies while here.

In order for me to fully understand what Archangel Michael meant by his statement, *“there are no victims,”* he asked me whether I believed Jesus had been a victim. He pointed out that Jesus was tortured, poisoned, brutally beaten, ridiculed, and nailed to the Cross. Michael said each of these things was done in an attempt to humiliate Jesus and make Him doubt who and what He was. Jesus responded to each of these assaults with compassion, love, and forgiveness and at no time did He stop being a warrior for His Father in Heaven. When you look at Jesus’ life in the light posited by Archangel Michael, of course Jesus was not a victim. He had a good idea of what He was going to experience while here and came willingly as God’s Son to

bring salvation to this world. While none of us is Jesus, each of us can follow the path that Jesus laid out for us by His example. Just as Jesus was not a victim, neither are we. We always have an opportunity to respond in a way that is close to God regardless of what Lucifer chooses to put in front of us. When we do this, the Kingdom of Heaven becomes stronger and we become the true “*warriors for God*” that we are. As Archangel Michael has told me, “*The path to God during this life has been shrouded in darkness for too long. Change is coming and now is the time for each person to find the road to Heaven here on earth and to bring Heaven here.*”

I know there will be great initial skepticism about what I have written. But I know too that God and His army of Angelic beings will dissolve your skepticism if you pray for your own answers and ask to feel the grace of God for yourself. I am going to close this chapter with a portion of God’s words delivered to me through Archangel Michael on December 28, 2007, which will set the stage for the remainder of this book: “*My son, the light that is Heaven is here. As We reveal ourselves to you, you can reveal Us to others. Revelation is just this. It is time to pull back the curtain of darkness that envelops this world. My brother’s [Lucifer’s] time is done. God has spoken. We are here and We are coming.*”

3

MY JOURNEY

My Son, your understanding has grown from a frame of what is of the Earth to what is of Heaven. Your eyes cannot see what they did. For now they see what is real. They know. My brother [Lucifer] cannot fool you any longer my shepherd. For it is God's flock over which you cast your watch. God is opening your true eyes, your eyes of Heaven. This is a great gift from God. It is an answer to prayer. It is a measure of your faith.

Archangel Michael

The above is a portion of a message Archangel Michael sent to me on July 17, 2008. The remainder of this message will be shared throughout this book. This chapter is about my journey and my life. While some aspects of my journey are individual to me, other aspects will be applicable to all. I now understand that I prayed to come to this world to get closer to God, but God chooses the means when He answers our prayers. In my case, one of the means has been writing this book and taking a role that is more visible than I would otherwise seek. But when you say, “Yes, Lord,” you do not know what you will be asked to do. Freewill gives you the right to say no, but, in my case, I trust God over my own inclinations because I now know what is real. I also have faith. While I do not know what

will happen, I am certain that the results can only be wonderful as long as I follow God's direction and consciously align my freewill with God's.

As I write this, other than God and His Angels, there is one woman who had a significant impact on my life. In seeking to love her, Heaven was able to teach me about selfless love. Currently, she does not realize that God used my love for her to help transform me into all that I am. Yet this is the way God works. God uses us even when we do not realize that we have given Him permission. This is why it is frequently "two by two" that God is found. The following is more from Archangel Michael's message:

People have been taught and continue to be taught ways to connect and serve God and to join the Holy Spirit not in flesh in this world. No man can choose the order or time of God's gifts, only God. This is not to be confused with instruction interpreted by others between Heaven and Earth. A gift from God passes from His Great Spirit directly into the hands of those He has chosen for His purpose. This cannot be questioned. So long as the recipient of the gift understands it is a great responsibility to pass this gift through his or her hands to others, nothing for the self, then God's gift will ever strengthen. For it is in its giving that witness is made of His presence and the great love He has for His children. It is the manner in which the vessel passes the gift that the vessel begins to earn it, not in how God chose.

There are two parts to God's gift. The first is one who prays to take the pain of another and to assist them without reward or outcome. This creates the space for God's love to come into and through another. Two by two does God provide His gifts. For the selfless love of another creates the second. No child of God is without another who can be loved like a Mother or Father, Sister or Brother, Wife, Husband, Daughter or

Son known here or known in Heaven. This “another” is the “second” of the two, created from love. We are all related by love.

I was born and raised in Florida. Archangel Michael explained to me that I accepted the family God chose for me. I had some very beautiful times and some very challenging times growing up. For some reason, it is during times of challenge and suffering that much of our growth occurs. This concept is difficult to understand and comprehend especially when one is going through the cleansing pain of the fire. However, Jesus understood this concept well when he made the following statements as recorded at Matthew 10:34-41:

Do not expect that I have come to spread peace, except destruction. For I came to turn the man against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against the mother-in-law. And the enemies of the man will be the children in his house. Whoever values father and mother more than me, is no use to me, and whoever values son and daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. And whoever does not bear his cross and follow me, is not worthy of me. Whoever seeks himself, loses himself, and whoever loses himself because of me, finds himself.

Until recently, I always had trouble grasping the meaning contained in these verses. Now I understand the meaning because I have lived it with my own family. In my father’s life, he made choices that he now regrets, as did my mother.³⁸ In earlier parts of my life, I emulated some of their bad choices and was taken further from God. Had I not recognized this and prayed for redemption, I would not be where I am. In this sense, I had to turn against some of the teachings and examples I had learned from both my mother and father.³⁹ This is why Jesus told us, “I am the way and the truth and the Life. No one comes to my Father except through me.”⁴⁰ As Archangel Michael has told

me, “*Jesus came not to start a religion but to show people how to live in this world. Jesus’ life choices are the path to Heaven.*”

The path of The Christ is a path that most in this world have neglected for too long.

Let me delve more closely into my family. My father is the most intelligent person I have known. He has a photographic memory and can recall the smallest details such as which cities we traveled through when we went on a particular vacation 45 years ago. I do not mean just which town we went through, I mean that he can recall the actual road numbers before the interstate road system was completed. He constantly reads books on history and religion, but he believes that religion is a construct of humanity used to comfort us when we experience the seemingly random aspects of life. My father lost his mother to cancer when he was very young as well as a brother during World War II. From these horrific experiences, he concluded that God did not exist because an omnipotent and loving deity would never allow such terrible things to occur. Most atheists have had similar experiences when they were young, and their experiences, combined with a lack of understanding as to why these experiences occurred, have affected their belief in God. During my father’s life, he made some poor choices as we all do. These choices were made through a combination of what he had been incorrectly taught as well as being tricked by the dark. Each poor choice my father made further compounded his pain and my father dealt with each subsequent hurt by not looking at the cause. As Archangel Michael has told me, “*Everyone copies what they have seen.*” I too refused to look at things that happened in my life and then decided to mask my pain with alcohol. Had I continued to make choices in line with those I saw others make, and had I continued to refuse to look, I would still be in the fire that Jesus tells us about. We all know people who are living in the fire because of choices and decisions they have made and continue to make. To be far from God has its own consequences but, for some reason, we rarely connect these

consequences with their true cause.

As I mentioned, I have been trained as a lawyer and not as a theologian. In college, my major was Philosophy and I have taught Sunday school for a number of years where I studied those theological subjects that interested me. But, I have no degrees except in the area of the law. My story seems fantastic and unbelievable when held against the frame our culture has created but this book has been written to change that frame. This is my calling. For reasons unknown to me, God through the Holy Spirit has asked me to write this book, bear witness, and proclaim His word. But I would ask that you never confuse the messenger with the message. I am an imperfect being whom God asked to serve in this manner. This is the way God works. We are all imperfect and all have sinned and fallen short of His glory. But our having sinned never alters or changes God's love for us. If it did, then God would not have truly loved us in the first place.

One of the most important lessons I am learning is not to judge myself for my past actions and decisions. Self-judgment not only hinders your own growth and development, but it places you in a position where you are less effective in serving God. Self-judgment is a form of fear brought to you by the dark. As Raphael has told me, "*God did not design this world for you to live perfectly in it.*" This means that God knew you would make mistakes while you were here and that your real growth would come when you learned to overcome those very mistakes. This is why the dark never wins. It is your mistakes coupled with your reflecting on them that makes you who you will become. This process of self-examination is what the Angels mean when they suggest that you should look at your life and then forgive yourself without self-judgment. Everyone has been taught wrongly. We have also intentionally or unintentionally hurt others because of the dark's constant intervention in our lives. Why do you think Jesus included in the Lord's Prayer⁴¹ the words "*be delivered from the evil one*"?

As Heaven has explained to me, self-judgment is the condemnation of one's self and that act diminishes Jesus' sacrifice. Inherent in this act of self-judgment is the belief that Jesus did not do enough and therefore you must suffer more yourself to atone for your own sins. Archangel Raphael made this point when he asked me one time when I was judging myself, "*Do you want Jesus to go back up on the Cross for you?*" By judging myself, I had been tricked into believing that Jesus' crucifixion did not result in complete atonement.⁴² This is why self-judgment is never appropriate. As Archangel Michael has told me, "*Fear or doubt has no place in freedom. Forgiveness is apparent when you can no longer judge because you know the suffering of all in this manifestation. What is there to forgive when you know compassion? It becomes as automatic as breath in this manifestation. To truly know and to forgive and be forgiven is to be freed. This is true freedom for all. It is the path to God, the Father.*"

I have been given the ultimate gift of having God's Angels begin to teach me about the meaning of this life and the nature of God's creation. This is information that most philosophers and theologians have spent their lives seeking. The difference is that many of these philosophers and theologians could only speculate, while the information I am conveying in this book is my understanding of what God's Heavenly Messengers have directly told me. But please remember that I am not trying to convert anyone. Rather, I am sharing the wisdom that God has imparted to me so that all can take these principles back to their own houses of worship and share God's love selflessly with others. Everyone here is in a different place. As such, each person will use the information contained in this book differently or not at all.

This book⁴³ is part of my journey. It has helped me (and will ultimately help my family) move closer to God. My reward comes directly from God and The Christ through experiencing their unconditional love as well as from helping others. I have

heard the voice of The Christ and felt His love by experiencing Mary Magdalene's presence. Mere words cannot describe the compassion, love, and understanding she conveyed to me through her eyes. When you are bathed in unconditional love, you are filled with more joy than anything this world can bring to you. My experiences were and are from God and these experiences are available to you too if you pray for them and are not afraid to accept that you are a child of God.

The challenge in this world is to find real sustainable joy. Notwithstanding what we have been taught and what is presented in the commercials that bombard us every day, real joy is not something you get from taking any pill or drink. Nor is it something you attain from adding a particular exercise to your fitness routine, losing weight, or undergoing surgery to change your physical appearance. Joy is not something that comes from having the approval of your peers or having a certain amount of money in your bank account. According to the Holy Spirit, *joy is the knowledge that there is nothing standing between you and your Father in Heaven*. Joy comes from living a life that is aligned with God and with Heaven. This means joy comes from walking the path of The Christ.

I am not going to promise that walking the path of The Christ is easy because it is not. When the Holy Spirit came to me and offered the opportunity to begin to purify myself so that I could be the vessel for God, I did not understand the difficulty inherent in this process. As a small child I remember being able to "feel everything" because I was so sensitive. But I began to shut down parts of myself when feeling my pain and the pain of others became too overwhelming. I soon walked around numb to most things and I even became color blind. By the time the Holy Spirit came to me a few years ago in a manner I could not deny, I was a walking blind person. Sure, technically my eyes worked but I had perfected the art of seeing only that which fit my picture of the way I thought the world worked. I rarely allowed myself to feel my own pain or the pain of others and so

I existed solely on the surface.

Imagine my surprise when the Angels explained to me that for them to take out my pain, I first had to allow myself to feel that pain again! “*There are no shortcuts with God,*” Archangel Michael told me. In a world where people are encouraged to mask their true feelings with medication, alcohol, mental exercises, shopping, sex, video games, and countless other distractions, this was not something I expected or even understood. With the help of my faith and my prayers, God’s Angels gently guided me through my life. There were many days when I would frequently cry between Heavenly meetings because to cry for others was not something I had allowed myself to do for decades. Finally, with the encouragement of the Holy Spirit, I could sometimes cry for myself.

Just as Archangel Michael had said, once I understood the tragedies that occurred in my youth and once I had the courage to feel my own pain and the feelings of anyone else involved, Archangel Raphael or another representative of the Holy Spirit would remove the pain from my body, mind, and soul.⁴⁴ In beginning to heal, I became more of who I am. This means that sometimes I am able to feel real joy. This process has allowed me to begin to forgive myself for those things I have done that hurt others. As I have continued to work with Heaven, I have begun to correct those behaviors that took me far from God. I also know that God forgave me a long time ago for my transgressions and loves me unconditionally. But it is important to realize that this process is not immediate. It is more like a rheostat because sometimes you make progress and sometimes you regress. The process reminds me of the platitude –“The journey is the destination.”

This redemptive process is what all souls who come here in flesh experience. For most, though, it only occurs after they *pass from flesh*.⁴⁵ You cannot leave this world and return to Heaven without looking at your life. This is because your growth depends on your understanding what really happened to you

while here rather than what you had been tricked into believing happened. While this process can be completed when you are still in a body, the lure of the things of this world prevents most people from clearly seeing the path to God while in the body. Therefore, most rarely pray to understand their lives and to heal while they are in a body. I will now explain what the Holy Spirit has told me happens when a person leaves his or her body. As soon as you leave your body, you will see a light. If you choose not to go to the light, you are in a place the Catholic Church refers to as purgatory. Many people in purgatory do not even know that they no longer have flesh. They have seen the light but they believe the light was not sent for them. As a result, they go about their existence in a haze of confusion. These souls remain in purgatory until their own prayers or the prayers of others⁴⁶ help them to understand that they are loved completely by God and that Heaven awaits them. At that point, they choose to go to the light.

If (or when) you decide the light is meant for you and you choose to go toward it, you will be greeted by Archangel Michael⁴⁷ who presents himself in a manner that will teach you the most about God's love.⁴⁸ Michael explains that God loves you unconditionally and has already forgiven your sins but that you need to look at your life to gain understanding before you re-enter the Kingdom of Heaven. As you review your life with Michael, you will see the people whom you have hurt as well as feel the pain they experienced as a result of those actions. You also talk to Michael about the people who have hurt you. As you experience these events again, Michael will show you why you acted as you did and how Lucifer and his agents were able to deceive both you and those who hurt you. This is part of God's plan for your growth because you can only move closer to God when you create within yourself more capacity for love. As Michael has told me, *"Fear or doubt has no place in freedom. Forgiveness is apparent when you can no longer judge because you know the suffering in all in this manifestation. What is there*

to forgive when you know compassion? It becomes as automatic as breath in this manifestation. To truly know and to forgive and be forgiven is to be freed. This is true freedom for all. It is the path to God, the Father.” This means your growth comes from learning to forgive others as well as yourself. Michael gently brings you the truth from God in the same manner God would do it because the name Michael means “one like God.” This time you spend with Michael is critical for you to understand the lies the dark has tricked you into accepting while you were here.

At the beginning of your conversation with Michael, Lucifer stands a short distance away and tries to get you to listen to him. Lucifer tells you that he is there to provide you with relief and assures you that if you choose to go with him then you will never have to look back at your life. Many people are afraid to look at their lives⁴⁹ and therefore take Lucifer’s hand. Lucifer uses lies and fear to trick souls into exercising their freewill to choose the dark rather than hear the truth from Michael. If you choose to go with Lucifer, then you have used your freewill to separate yourself further from God. The result of this choice is that you have been tricked by the dark into going to the place the Christian religion refers to as hell rather than look at sins that have already been forgiven by God. Hell for each soul is different because it is completely personal. The incident that each soul was too afraid to review with Archangel Michael is the same incident Lucifer replays over and over again for the soul who chose to take Lucifer’s hand. Lucifer must use this approach because he has no real power. This is why Lucifer must continually convince souls in hell that God would never take them back. Each soul in hell constantly relives those incidents that he or she was trying to hide from but the remembrance brought by the dark only reinforces that soul’s belief of being unworthy of God’s love. Lucifer never brings the truth. This means souls in hell have trapped themselves into constantly experiencing the pain they think they inflicted on others rather than seeing that it was actually Lucifer who instigated the pain. The good news is that

souls trapped in hell do not remain there for eternity contrary to what many religions teach. A soul stays there only until God's Angels, with the help of prayers from others, come to release that person.⁵⁰ Only God knows when each soul is ready to leave because it is always dependent upon that person's freewill. If someone believes he or she is unworthy of God's love and is afraid to talk to God, then the person will stay in hell. Hell is that personal. While God did not create hell, He allows it to exist because there are many lessons that can be learned there.

One of the most destructive ideas that Lucifer has tricked Bible translators into propagating is the concept of eternal damnation. Matthew 18:8 contains the following warning from Jesus: "*If then your hand or foot leads you to commit an atrocity, cut it off and cast it away from you. For you are better off entering everlasting life a cripple, rather than whole, and not having two hands or two feet you may fall into the everlasting fire.*" When you look at the footnote Mr. Alexander inserted for this section in his Biblical translation, the passage is literally interpreted, "*By the fire that to the [end of the] universe.*" As recorded in Matthew 25:46, Jesus said: "*and they will go these to eternal torment and the saintly to eternal life.*" Again Mr. Alexander in the footnote indicated that the word "eternal" means "to the universe."⁵¹ This means that when this world returns fully to Heaven, those who choose to be incompatible with Heaven will then go "to the universe." This does not mean they are eternally lost only that they will be reached in another way and in another time.

One of the earliest patriarchs in the early Christian Church was Origen Adamantius who was born in 185 A.D. in Egypt and died in 254 A.D. He was a Christian scholar and theologian who wrote a treatise entitled *On First Principles*.⁵² In this book, Origen explored the concept that all souls, including Lucifer himself, will eventually achieve salvation in the fullness of time. Origen grounded this concept in God's love. Origen believed that God's love was so powerful that it would soften even the hardest heart.

He also believed that human intellect, being in the image of God, would never freely choose oblivion over proximity to God. I have been told that Origen is correct. Everyone has freewill and can choose to be separated from God, and Lucifer has tricked many into doing just that. But using pure logic, why would God ever want or demand that anyone be forever separated from Him when that person specifically prayed to come here as His servant? This idea of eternal damnation is just another trick that Lucifer must employ because he has no power. Lucifer has to get souls to believe this lie in order to keep them.

Some may think it heretical, but God still loves Lucifer unconditionally just as He loves each of us. No action taken by you, except through the exercise of your freewill, can separate you from God. Lucifer tricks us into believing that certain sins are unforgivable. But if this were true, Jesus' suffering on the Cross would have been in vain. Once you understand the true nature of God's love, you know that God would never separate Himself from anyone.⁵³ Any separation from God occurs only because we have directly or indirectly allowed it to happen. Lucifer then tricks us into believing that God would never love us again because our actions have not been in perfect accordance with His rules. Those who are tricked into believing this do not understand the true nature of God and His love. God's love is eternal and God's love is for everyone regardless of religious affiliation. No one should ever believe otherwise.

God recently allowed me to meet Didymus the Blind. While in flesh, Didymus lost the use of his eyes when he was four and, yet, he said, "*God gave me eyes.*" Ethnically, he was a Coptic Jew who memorized the entire Old and New Testament and was placed at the head of the Catechetical School of Alexandria. Didymus taught universal salvation and believed that, "*in the liberation of all no one remains a captive.*" I can assure you that both Origen and Didymus got it right even though the Catholic Church once condemned them both.⁵⁴ Both of these patriarchs also believed in the doctrine of the transmigration of souls.⁵⁵

Their belief in this concept, although unpopular at the time, is correct. According to the Holy Spirit, reincarnation is not an accurate word to use to describe this process. Once God creates a soul, that soul is an eternal being who will live forever. But each soul can pray to God to be allowed to return to this world as often as he or she asks in order to serve God and grow closer to Him through helping others. We have one life that begins when God places a part of Himself in matter and creates us. But God allows us to have many different experiences and manifestations once He gives us our life.

One probing question is why anyone would choose to take Lucifer's hand over Archangel Michael's. I can tell you why from my own personal experience. It is extremely painful to look back at your life and see how your thoughts and actions have hurt the very people you loved. While this opportunity was something I had prayed for, it did not make looking at my life any easier. The first thing it taught me is that only God can judge a soul. There is a reason Jesus warned us about seeing a straw in another's eye when there is a beam in our own.⁵⁶ Jesus came to show us how to live our lives while we are here and passing judgment on others does not bring us closer to God. Judgment is only reserved for the Father with delegation to the Son.⁵⁷ I realize now how many people were hurt by my judgment.⁵⁸ Most times, when I thought I was right I was actually wrong. Once you truly understand that judgment is inconsistent with love, then compassion for others becomes second nature. It is for this reason that God asks us to look at our lives even though He has already forgiven our sins. This process is perfect because God created it. By looking back at your life with Michael, you are able to learn and grow from your poor choices. All of us knew before we came that we would make mistakes and this too is part of God's perfect plan. Why do you think He permitted this world to exist with Lucifer having switched sides? God is never surprised by anything.

Once you review your life with Michael, you find real joy again and are ready to return to Heaven. But real joy is not

attained easily. This is why we cherish it so much and why those in Heaven have earned their place. This knowledge should help you to recognize the fearlessness and courage of all souls who have chosen to come into this world to serve God. You should also start to see God's wisdom and love at work notwithstanding the pain and suffering we see around us.

4

ANGELS

Now you understand what We, the Angels of the Lord, see. Your “see” is now beginning to be as our own. It is a “knowing” through love. A gift from God. The measure of your pain is no longer your own. Yet the pain of others is as real a pain as your own could ever be.

From this place do We serve. From this place do We pick up those who fall from Him. From this place do We carry His love. From this place do We serve His will. From this place do We grow ever closer to God.

Archangel Michael

God, The Christ, and the Holy Spirit have always been here. Archangel Michael recently told me, “*There are more Angels now here than the world can contemplate and they are gathering for a reason. They are here to be with those who are ready to follow the path to God through finding The Christ.*” This is a chapter I have been looking forward to writing. It is difficult for me to describe the absolute joy I experience when I am given the privilege of being in the presence of (and talking with) each of the Angels God sends before me. Because of these experiences, I know that people are incorrect who think we are just absorbed back into God when we pass from flesh. I know that we do not lose our own separate identities because each Angel I have met has a distinct personality.⁵⁹ Yet all of the

Angels are filled with the love and the power God has given them to bring to this world, and such love and power is evident. I have included at the back of this book an Appendix of Angels that lists each Angel who has appeared before me along with a brief description of what I understand to be true about each of them.

As I write this, I am aware that those who have not yet experienced what I have may be just as skeptical as I was at first. I am sure that many will discount what I say because they may believe that I am doing one or more of the following: imagining these conversations, “channeling,” seeking publicity for some self-serving reason, or taking drugs. I am doing none of these things. One fact of life is that there are few secrets when you live in a small town. Sometimes this is beneficial and sometimes not. Regardless, if I were not in touch with reality, an “occultist,” or otherwise a publicity seeker, this fact would be well known by those whom I have come in contact with after living for many years in a small town in Alabama. I do speak with the Angels who appear before me, and these Angels have become an integral part of my passage from one who is just a man to one who is beginning to know God and who has willingly become His servant.

Angels have always been here. God created them and their presence is proof of God’s existence and His great love for us. As Archangel Michael says, the miracle of my talking with him is *“no different from the other miracles we see in our everyday lives. We just take these other miracles for granted.”* The majority of us do not understand that there is a piece of God in everything that has life. As Archangel Michael has explained to me, *“In order to create life, God takes matter and adds a piece of Himself to it. It is the piece of God that is ‘life.’”* We spend our time on this Earth surrounded by what is sacred, or what is “of God,” and most of us never realize it.⁶⁰ As Archangel Michael has said, *“When we see grass grow we do not appreciate all of the miracles at work because we perceive it is ‘just’ grass.”*

Life, itself, is a miracle whether it is in other living creatures, plants, or us. We just take such miracles for granted because we think we understand them. One of the things Angels have prayed for is the ability to speak with those who will listen. I could hear Heaven speak once I decided to allow myself to do so, but you too have been born with the same capacity and ability. You just have to get past your initial fear of experiencing something that is different from what you have been taught is possible. This is what the Angels mean when they say we have to change our frames of reference. Just as Archangel Raphael has told me, “*The lie has become the truth.*”

There are many stories about people who have heard the voice of God or His Angels in most religions. In the Christian faith, we call those who had such experiences mystics. The problem with this term is that we think only mystics have that capacity. Once our culture embraces this lie, we accept as true that mystics are people who have had a type of interaction with Heaven that is unavailable to the rest of humanity. When this occurs, we have collectively been fooled into believing that communication with God and His Angels is something only possible for a select few. We need to realize that God wants all of us to be mystics.⁶¹ Once the conditions are present – selfless love, no fear, and faith - you will personally begin to feel and hear God and the Holy Spirit. If a mystic is one who can hear God clearly, all of us were mystics when we were children. But as we grew up, we were taught fear and thus lost this ability. This is why the experience of being *born again* or *born from above* is just returning to what we all were as children because, as children, we allowed ourselves to feel love completely. The concept of original sin is a lie that was created by the dark to keep us from believing we are capable of feeling God.

In the book *Mystics of the Christian Tradition*,⁶² its author Steven Fanning begins his epilogue with the following statement: “Attempting to make generalizations concerning these almost one hundred mystics whose lives stretch across the

two thousand years of the existence of Christianity can easily lead to the invention of a false uniformity that obliterates the myriad individual experiences of diverse people living in quite different cultures and historical circumstances.”⁶³ As I have elaborated in different sections of this book, your relationship with God is yours alone. It is the most personal relationship you will ever have. In fact, your relationship with God is so unique that it will never mirror another’s. God loves each of us that much.

Archangel Raphael once raised with me a cautionary note regarding belief systems, though. He said, *“If you believe in everything or nothing, you are subjecting yourself to my brother’s [Lucifer’s] temptations.”* We have created different religions because we inherently understand that we must believe in something specific. But this creation of distinct religions has also made us vulnerable to the temptation to pass judgment upon other belief systems that are different from our own. Many of us are guilty of allowing our separate belief system to divide us rather than understanding that each of us has an individual and unique relationship with God. God does not require uniformity because, if He did, the gift of freewill would be an illusion. As the Holy Spirit has taught me, while there are many roads to the Father, each road is always paved with the love of The Christ.

Archangel Raphael recently explained to me what happens to each of us who are here in the flesh. He said, *“When you are born here, you are very close to God. But if no one holds you or feeds you, fear comes. Also, if the one who holds you thinks she is unworthy, fear comes. If your father is afraid for you in this world, fear comes.”* This fear is the beginning of your experiencing separation from God. Archangel Raphael then turned to our relationship with one another. He said, *“For my brother [Lucifer] to win, he must convince someone to treat another as less and my brother does this by getting everyone to draw distinctions.”* As an example, Raphael explained that when slaves were imported from Africa, there was sexual interaction

between the master and the slave that resulted in children being born who were categorized as mulattoes. As a result of these relationships, over time it became difficult to tell the difference between the races. He said, *“This is why anti-miscegenation laws were enacted. For [Lucifer] to win, people must be tricked into differentiating among and between themselves and overlooking those things that make everyone think of themselves as family. [Lucifer] also has to make people afraid to ask questions about their blood relationships. In the southern states in the U.S., most people have at least two of the three possible blood lines – African, Native American, and European.”*⁶⁴

If we think about it, the concept of a common set of parents for all people of this world is set forth in the Adam and Eve story in Genesis. This was God’s message to us. We are all related and are of one family regardless of how we look. Archangel Raphael continued by saying, *“If you live the path of The Christ, you quickly see everyone as your brother or sister. [Lucifer] must keep people apart in order to win.”*

This is something we can learn from studying the lives of those whom we call mystics. As Mr. Fanning said in his epilogue: *“Perhaps the archetyped image of the mystic is that of the hermit, sitting on a mountain top withdrawn from contact with the world while lost in private communion with God. Yet very few of the mystics examined here were true hermits, and even those who lived ‘in solitude’ typically lived within shouting distance of other ‘solitaries’ and, like the Russian startzi, found their lives occupied in providing spiritual guidance to their fellow monastics and even to great numbers of the laity. These mystics demonstrate remarkable involvement in the affairs of the church and the world. Many were founders and reformers of monastic orders . . . or were abbots, church leaders and heads of monastic houses . . . Some carried on the heavy administrative burden of high ecclesiastical office as bishops . . . , archbishops . . . and even pope . . .”*⁶⁵ The point is that they served God by helping others, and they did not fixate on themselves. This is the

same approach that Angels use in their service to God because this approach reflects the true nature of love. It also provides the necessary conditions for Heaven and Earth to become one. When those of us here in flesh serve God selflessly, we join with the Holy Spirit and Heaven becomes stronger. As the Holy Spirit has taught me, *“Two by two is the quickest way to the Father.”* Once we understand why we are in this world, we can strive everyday to grow closer to God by following the true rules of the path of The Christ. As Archangel Raphael has told me, *“The path of The Christ is to walk the path through your life and not just to an event.”*

For a moment, let us return to the concepts contained in the quote from Archangel Michael at the beginning of Chapter 2. God is calling all of His children back to Him and there is nothing about this return journey that is exclusive or secret. God has always been here, and feeling His grace and hearing His voice are possible for all who ask in prayer to feel God’s presence in their lives. The feeling of God’s presence will be enhanced when you are not afraid to hear and have no foreign substances in your body such as alcohol.⁶⁶ God is asking all of us to be mystics because His gifts are available to anyone who wants to experience His presence. All you need do is pray to receive God’s gifts so you can serve others selflessly. Once this is done, God’s gifts will be considered normal and soon these gifts will spread throughout the world as we help each other. When this happens, this world will again be fully part of Heaven. Again I ask, how can there be any fear in this? God is perfect and this process will be implemented perfectly.

Angels who serve God cannot abide outside of Heaven. When Lucifer fell, he had to move humanity a few degrees away from God so he would have a place to reside. This is why we can live in Heaven or with the dark at any moment. Our true nature is of Heaven but the dark can trick us into losing our faith for a moment. When we reside in Heaven, just as the Bible says, we are “not of this world.”⁶⁷ When we are tricked

into judgment, we leave Heaven and join the dark. This is why Angels are constantly working to help our prayers get answered so we necessarily move toward Heaven again. As long as we are in bodies, we will live somewhere between Heaven and the dark depending on what our thoughts, intent, and actions are each moment. This is why Angels are always waiting for us to give them a chance to work. The conditions are very simple for Angels to come – no fear, faith, and selfless love. Selfless love means there is nothing for the self in the exchange, which means no gifts, no money, and no recognition. This explains why the institutional church has unwittingly hurt its capacity to serve God by paying its clergy.

I want to close this chapter by emphasizing an important theological distinction that Archangel Michael taught me. Sometimes an Angel speaks as a separate Angel and is thus speaking as a created being. But sometimes an Angel speaks as a “We,” which means at that moment the Angel has become a representative of the Holy Spirit. When this shift from “I” to “We” occurs, the energy in the room changes noticeably. The power of God is evident whether you are speaking to an individual Angel or the Holy Spirit, but neither of these experiences compares to the loving power you feel when God speaks directly to you. Nothing compares to being in the direct presence of God. This is why Angels are very clear that they are not to be prayed to or worshipped.⁶⁸ They know any power they have comes solely from God. But being in the presence of Angels of the Lord is wonderful because each Angel’s unconditional love for you is apparent. It does not take long for you to understand that Angels are here to guide and protect you. All you have to do is give them the opportunity to work, which you do when you create the conditions for Heaven to come – no fear, faith, and selfless love for others.

WHO ARE WE AND WHY ARE WE HERE?

Consider the efforts of Heaven to reach you, and those in this world. It is every moment. God seeks to reach all His children. He loves us all. He rallies those of us in the Holy Spirit to His will to each of their resurrections.

Do not focus on how hard it is to be all that you are in this world. Rather, be that which is of Him. Faith is the fulfillment of His grace, for in it the circle of love turns for eternity. The love of Heaven lifting all those who were lost for a time, and they in turn joining us to lift others, forever.

Archangel Michael

Who are we and why are we here? These are the big questions that have been asked as long as human beings have inhabited this planet. Many atheists believe that the experiences of this lifetime totally encompass a person's existence and this is why they are only focused on the here and now. People of faith believe there is more to this world than is apparent and are constantly striving to understand God's input in their lives. The people of faith are correct.

In this chapter I will explore what the Angels have told me about humankind's purpose. If you are like me, it takes time to grasp these concepts so you may need to read this chapter many times to understand what Heaven would like for you to know

about yourself and your life here. To begin, we were created in the image of God just as the Bible says. But Archangel Michael has encouraged me not to dwell on the vessel (our earthly bodies) or this world because *“Each are just illusions - mere moments in time.”* Rather, our focus should be on our souls. This is because, in Archangel Michael’s words, *“Our souls are meant to hold the Son (The Christ) and to bring Heaven to this Earth while we are here.”*

If your life mirrors mine, it is difficult at first to adopt Archangel Michael’s approach because our frames of reference are so grounded in this world. I began to understand part of what he was telling me when I considered that nothing in this world is permanent. We intuitively know this but we rarely examine the consequences of this fact. Archangel Raphael again broached this subject when he told me our bodies are *“just dirt.”* Again the impermanence of this world was emphasized. At another time, Archangel Michael told me, *“The only permanent things in this world are your soul and what you take from your experiences here.”* So what does this mean? It means that God has created this world and all things in it for us to have these momentary experiences to learn how to love. When things are difficult, try to remember that you prayed to come here knowing the challenges that lay before you while you were inside a body.

Generally the answers to our questions about our life and its purpose are dictated by the assumptions we bring to the question. This is why atheists assert that a loving, omniscient, and omnipotent God would never allow this world to exist because of the pain and suffering they see around them. Their assumptions do not permit a broader frame of reference. Clearly, if one assumes that every soul only gets one chance in life and this is it, then it would be difficult to reconcile a loving and all powerful God with the evil we see. But if this world is just one iteration of a soul’s existence and God knows what each person can learn about love and compassion through experiencing evil while here, then a different answer becomes obvious. This is

why Richard Bach said, “The mark of your ignorance is the depth of your belief in injustice and tragedy. What the caterpillar calls the end of the world, the master calls a butterfly.”⁶⁹

Atheists also frequently confuse the actions of those who claim to be working for God with actions ordained by God. This is why Jesus came to show us the path of The Christ and how to live in this world. Jesus always responded in love regardless of what was put in front of Him by Lucifer. Even though I frequently point to Jesus and His life, it is important to understand that He did not come to start a religion. The Christ or God’s love in this world has always been here and is part of all world religions. While believing in something is important, we should always understand that God is so much more than what we can envision or comprehend while here. This is why the religions we create only encompass a small fraction of who God really is and what He can do. To again quote from Richard Bach, “The original sin is to limit the Is [God]. Don’t.”⁷⁰

Archangel Michael has told me that we are “*immortal beings of light.*” We are immortal because anything God creates never dies. Archangel Michael has also told me we are “*warriors for God who came to fight that which is far from Him.*”⁷¹ In a sense, this makes us avatars. God takes a part of our soul and places it in an earthly body for a finite time.⁷² Each of us knew this world was a war zone and yet each chose to come here as a servant of God armed only with love. To make it personal, God knows what you will do before you do it and He knows what effect your experiences will have on your ultimate development as a soul. This is why your experiences here are part of your journey to move closer to God. The benefit of this war zone is that your journey is accelerated when you learn to love yourself and others selflessly regardless of what the dark has done to you (or gotten you to believe about yourself) while here.

An example of God’s genius is that we come with no memory of the prayers that brought us here. Otherwise we would have an experience much different from what we prayed for. All we

bring with us are our consciences and our personalities. Each person's conscience is the combined learning of that person's soul from the point he or she was created.⁷³ This temporal world allows us to experience everything as if it were new. We go from birth to death in a body that makes everything seem real. But none of what we experience is real because no one can be permanently hurt by his or her experiences while here. This is why Archangel Michael has told me this world is "*an illusion - a mere moment in time.*"⁷⁴ This knowledge does not make what we go through any easier, but it should give us hope that our suffering is not in vain. Also, the Angels know exactly what we are experiencing because they suffer alongside us. The Angels assigned to this world believe they can serve us better if they feel the same things we do. This is why they suffer with us but they also rejoice when we find love.

Another wonderful fact I have learned from my journey is that you never lose yourself as you move closer to God. Rather there is a mystical union through which God always dwells within you and yet you retain all that makes you who you are. This is why the ultimate gift from God is freewill. It is also why God will not violate your freewill. Angel Simon recently told me that you are the sum and substance of every decision you ever made since God created you. This is why you will never lose your distinctiveness and yet God will continue to become a greater part of you as you move closer to Him. This is the mystery of God.

I know firsthand that one's distinctiveness is never lost because I have experienced each Angel's individual nature in my many conversations with them. Each Angel has his or her own separate personality and delivery. Some use humor and gentle words to heal and teach while others choose to deliver God's message in a direct and serious manner. Regardless of the approach, all are completely infused with God and His love. You too can learn to be totally infused with God's love when you pray for the experience. As Archangel Michael has told me,

“Fear and unwillingness to serve as a vessel for God’s will are the only things that separate anyone from having a personal relationship with God.”

Encounters with Angels are described in the Bible, the Torah, and the Koran. The typical first reaction each person has in the presence of an Angel is fear. This is because the person is experiencing something new and has no frame against which to judge the experience. After having had hundreds of conversations with Angels, I can tell you there is nothing to fear. Initially, I too had to overcome a substantial amount of self-imposed fear because the experience was completely foreign and unknown to me. I quickly realized, though, that these experiences were something only God could make possible. Now I look forward to every encounter because I know there is never any judgment coming from an Angel. Plus, I know each Angel will bring me a combination of God’s love intertwined with that Angel’s own love. In such an environment, what is there to fear? Each encounter is sacred and God’s perfection quickly becomes obvious. It is amazing when you are brought answers to your questions from Heaven or God brings to you His wisdom combined with His comforting love and joy.

As I said earlier, I brought fear to my first encounter with Michael because I was experiencing something that was completely outside my frame of reference and what I considered “normal.” Also, my fear came because I was not sure what I was experiencing was “of God.” Archangel Michael first appeared to me in the form of an old Native American medicine man.⁷⁵ At that moment, I was so scared my only memory of the event is that Archangel Michael said, “*You have a good heart.*” Michael later explained that he could not initially appear to me as he does now because I did not consider myself worthy of such a visitation. He told me I would have been completely paralyzed by fear if he had told me who he really was. As I think back to the way he first appeared, my fear was not of judgment because I really had no concept of what was occurring.⁷⁶ Rather, my fear

was based on experiencing something outside what I thought possible. Also, at that time, I had judged myself a sinner who was unworthy of help from God. This is how Lucifer tricks us into voluntarily separating ourselves from Heaven. But once you realize the trick for what it is, you will embrace each new encounter with Heaven knowing how much God and His Holy Messengers love you.

One of the joyous gifts I have received is to know how much humor and teasing there is in Heaven. Archangel Raphael frequently teases me, and he and I laugh together at whatever lesson he is teaching. When I was speaking with Archangel Raphael long after my initial meeting with Michael, Raphael explained that they had to initially appear to me in a manner that would not scare me as a result of my fear. He then teased me by saying, *“Don’t think you won’t hear about this again.”* Heaven is all that you hoped it would be and more. I have come a long way because of the help I have received from God and His Heavenly Messengers. In fact, I now have relationships with many of the Angels with whom I speak. I also understand that I am simultaneously part of Heaven whenever I reach out to God without fear. This is the way God originally intended all of us to live in this world because this world was just another iteration of Heaven before Lucifer fell.

I want to reiterate a concept I touched on earlier. Contrary to what many of us have been taught, there is nothing to fear from Angels because they do not judge us. In fact, they frequently remind me that only God can judge. Angels of the Lord do not lie because that is not part of their state of being as Holy Messengers. Angels are here as God’s servants and help to guide us as well as bring us the truth.⁷⁷ What you feel in their presence is the grace of God. This is why nothing can harm you when you are in the presence of an Angel of the Lord. At that moment, you are part of Heaven. The reason each Angel shows only love is because that is what each Angel has learned from God and then brings to this world. God is the total embodiment of love and as

an Angel moves closer to Him, that Angel's ability to love only increases. This same principle applies to us. God is our Father without beginning or end, and He only creates with love because that is His essence.

Though you probably have not yet had the type of experiences with Angels I have had, I believe that you, some member of your family, or a friend of yours has likely had an extraordinary experience in which someone was saved or protected in a manner that could not be logically explained. This is how Angels work. Angels have always been here and their presence is one sign of God's existence. While they can appear before us in a variety of forms, Angels usually communicate with us through our dreams and through our conscious thought. This is something each of us needs to understand. Because God created your soul, you are never alone. God and those Angels whom God ordained to help you know your every thought, action, and emotion because they are always with you. Sometimes there can be confusion as to whether you are thinking the thought yourself or whether the thought is coming from Heaven. Next time, ask that question and see if you get an answer. When you hear an answer, check it by examining its fruits. Heaven will always guide you and your actions closer to God. With this as background, I know that you will find Angels in your life when you start looking for them.

A reasonable question to ask is, "Why do we not see Angels as we see other people or things in this world?" The answer is we would not have true freewill as part of our experiences here if we could. If you saw Angels the way they really are - very large and powerful beings of light who are continually at work - your experience in this world would be different from what God and you intended it to be. Everyone chose to come to this world knowing that some here act in ways that are very close to God while others act in ways that are much further from Him. It is this very interaction of the freewill of these souls at different levels of development that creates the opportunity for the learning experience everyone desired when he or she chose to come. You

also chose to come because you wanted the opportunity to make a quantum leap toward God in a very short amount of time. The magnitude of the leap is based on how you learn to respond to the dark's attacks – attacks that you knew would be here before you chose to come.

While Angels cannot and do not judge our souls, they do judge our behavior. I have done things that are far from God and these have been pointed out to me. I believe it is obvious which behavior⁷⁸ brings us closer to God and which behavior takes us further from Him. As Archangel Raphael has told me, *“There is no stasis in this world. Every instant while you are here you are either moving in one direction or the other.”* In addition to our own actions, when you throw into the mix that Lucifer and his minions are constantly trying to trick us into doing something that will take us further from God, it is obvious why the Angels refer to this world as a “war zone.” But it is this very environment that offers each of us the experiences that none of us could have in Heaven. This is why if you only focus on the suffering in this world (or if you pretend such suffering does not exist), your experience here will not make sense. As Archangel Michael has told me, *“Loving is knowing the truth and loving through it.”*

Since Jesus walked this world in a body, Lucifer has worked very hard to convince people that God and His Angels do not exist. Lucifer's goal is to remove from this world the feelings of Heaven. Lucifer has made giant leaps to accomplishing this goal since the Age of Enlightenment. In the last few decades, Lucifer has been very creative in teaching us to embrace “noise” that prevents us from hearing God and His Heavenly Messengers. Just walk through any crowd and look at the number of smartphones people are using to distract themselves from the world around them. Notwithstanding this, we intuitively know that God is critical for our growth and that there is no substitute for God regardless of our culture's teachings.

We in the West especially need to ask ourselves why Jesus told us it was easier for a camel to go through the eye of the

needle than for a rich person to enter Heaven.⁷⁹ The harmful effects of wealth have not changed in 2,000 years. Jesus knew that people with monetary wealth often use the things of this world to divert themselves from what is truly important. The main limitation in this method of distraction is that each new thing does not enchant for long. This is why wealthy people are never satisfied with what they have and are always seeking more. What separates rich people from others is that they have the resources to keep acquiring new possessions, which means they rarely feel the need to examine why they feel empty, ill, or dissatisfied until a crisis hits. There is also a social convention among the wealthy that they are supposed to be happy because of what their wealth can provide. When wealth is examined in this light, its ability to hurt becomes obvious. If you want to research this principle, just use the Internet to study the lives of lottery winners. Most say that winning the lottery was the worst thing that ever happened to them.

When each of my daughters reached the age of thirteen, I took her to a Christian camp located in Northern California for a one-week father/daughter session. In addition to this father/daughter week, the camp had the usual two-week sessions. One of the activities during the two-week sessions was an overnight solo where each camper was required to spend the better part of two days in the woods with nothing but a Bible for company. The campers were explicitly prohibited from having any electronic device. Most campers feared this overnight solo. If approached correctly, this solitary time would be perfect for spiritual growth but these young people had been raised to avoid contemplating those things in life that are important. I believe this example is a metaphor for how most of us in the West live. Lucifer has tricked our culture into teaching us to adopt habits that prevent us from seeking time with God. As if television and radio were not enough of a diversion, now we have the Internet, portable DVD players, portable mp3 music players, cell phones, smartphones, tablets, and computers. These activities can keep

us so entertained and distracted that we never choose a quiet moment to contemplate God and experience Heaven. This is why many in our culture only experience God when they (or people they love) are sick, someone close to them dies, or there is a new birth. Absent such situations, our culture has taught us to place our priorities elsewhere.

Separation from God has painful consequences, but any separation from God is not something He imposes upon us. As such, a reunification with our Father in Heaven will occur the instant we ask for it if we create the conditions that permit us to feel Heaven again. Obviously, God never left us because His love is eternal and unconditional. This means we are the ones who embraced the concept that God's love is conditional, and this explains why we are the only ones who can eliminate it. Heaven always comes when we ask to feel the Holy Spirit's presence, but we only feel this love when we believe we are worthy. This is why self-judgment is so damaging to our relationship with God.

Let me return to a quote from Richard Bach's book *Illusions – The Adventures of a Reluctant Messiah*: “The mark of your ignorance is the depth of your belief in injustice and tragedy. What the caterpillar calls the end of the world, the master calls a butterfly.”⁸⁰ God has allowed this world to remain in its current state to permit us to have the very experiences we are having. Yes there is evil here but this evil provides us the opportunity to respond in love regardless of what the dark does. This is also why God sent His Son Jesus. Jesus came to show us how to live in this “war zone.” You have chosen this time and this world to give yourself the opportunity to learn to love and to move closer to God by confronting evil with love, compassion, and forgiveness. The pain and suffering others bring to you while you are in this world (as well as the pain you bring to yourself) provide you with the opportunity to learn how to love and forgive. In Heaven, these concepts are theoretical but here they seem very real. When you have learned to forgive someone in

this world who has deliberately wronged either you or someone you love, you have just gotten a brief glimpse of how much God loves.

Think about the many natural negative reactions we experience when someone hurts people we love or ourselves: anger, hate, fear, and judgment coupled with a desire for revenge and retribution. I could continue naming more of these common negative human responses. When you learn to forgive and feel compassion for the one who intentionally or accidentally hurts those you love or yourself, then you have just started learning the real meaning of love. When you pray for the person who has hurt either you or your loved ones, you complete the circle of love that is of God. Why do you think Jesus said we must love our enemies? (See Matthew 5:44.) Our entire growth as souls is dependent upon learning to love because that is God's essence. His love is not conditional nor can ours be if we are to be His pure vessels. This is the lesson Jesus was teaching us when He became the earthly embodiment of The Christ. Jesus came to show us how to walk the path of God's love. The early Christians said they were following "The Way," because Jesus and His life perfectly embodied The Christ.

While our earthly bodies can be hurt and will ultimately die, our immortal souls are never permanently harmed. You are an eternal being and God's rules for this world, including talking to Michael before you leave this world, are designed so that your soul is not permanently injured. God's love, light, and truth always heal. As Archangel Raphael has told me, "*The security you want is already here.*" However, we can only attain this security through knowing God and moving closer to Him.

As I said earlier, in the Aramaic Bible as translated by Victor Alexander, the negative reference to "*eternity*" is translated as "*cast to the universe.*" It is Lucifer who has tricked the translators into using the word "eternal" to describe what happens when we have not yet learned what God is teaching. There is no eternal separation from God unless someone chooses to exercise his or

her freewill to be separated from Him. “*Casting to the universe*” will occur at Jesus’ visible second coming, but even those who are cast to the universe will find God in another way and in another time. Please pray for those who have passed from flesh because your prayers are felt across all time and space. Also, never limit God by doubting His love for you regardless of what you think you have done. There is no eternal separation from God unless you make a choice for it to happen, either consciously or unconsciously. Why would God, your Creator and Father, ever want you to be separated from Him? Separation is not in the nature of love. God is love and this message of love in all of its forms is what God continually reveals through the Holy Spirit, the prophets, and The Christ.

I would like you to ponder one question when you contemplate the evil and suffering that is before you. If someone experiences something horrible but his or her response to that event or circumstance permits the person to move closer to God, was that experience bad or good? I have met the Angel of the Lord, Mary Magdalene, who is now a very large and magnificent Angel. Mary told me about her life when Jesus walked here in flesh, and her story proves the power of God’s love and its redemptive qualities. Mary was born into a prominent family. At the age of eleven, a gang of thieves captured and raped her. After that experience, rather than help her, her family and community cast her out.⁸¹ As such, she was alone, without resources, and forced to wander from town to town trying to find help. Everywhere she went, someone abused her again. Hungry, traumatized, and terrified, she was offered and accepted food and a bed from a brothel owner in Galilee. For the next ten years of her life, men and women raped Mary many times each day. The experiences Mary had were so difficult and the psychological torture so severe that Mary acquired seven demons. This meant that she could no longer feel God and was living in hell. Mary did not reach this spiritual state because it was her fault. She reached this state because the people who had hurt her had convinced

Mary that she was to blame. Once Mary took responsibility for a situation that was not her fault,⁸² she had separated herself from God. Despite her experiences, Mary would stare out of the brothel window each night and pray to God. One day she heard a crowd gathering and went to investigate. The crowd was surrounding a man named Jesus. When Jesus approached Mary, He told her that she had the most beautiful soul He had ever seen. After meeting Jesus, Mary's life forever changed. As I have said many times, God answers every prayer.

There is no question that the experiences Mary endured as a girl and as a young woman were horrific. Yet, when I talked to Mary, she told me "*do not weep for me.*" God had sent Jesus and she was completely healed from everything that Lucifer had done to her body, mind, and soul. Mary is now a huge Angel, and the love that emanates from her is indescribably wonderful. Mary looks at her life on this Earth as a blessing and told me that she would change nothing about it. In retrospect, it was those very experiences that brought Mary to the path of The Christ. Now there is no woman Mary cannot help because her experiences here have equipped her to know what each woman goes through when the dark attacks.

Many in this world are frustrated because justice is rarely apparent. I want you to consider for a moment what happened when Jesus was hanging on the Cross. Remember that Jesus told the robber next to Him that he, the robber, would soon be with Jesus in Heaven. The robber had admitted his guilt and had accepted the punishment given to him by this world. Yet when the robber asked Jesus to remember him, Jesus said, "*Assuredly, I say to you, today you will be with Me in Paradise.*"⁸³ Jesus is telling us that the judicial systems of this world are just illusions. There is no lineal or rational path to God while you are here because you can find Him in your last breath.

I would ask that you consider for a moment why souls would choose to be born in the United States as African Americans or Native Americans knowing that these races have been subject

to so much abuse and discrimination. Is it possible they want to learn how to love and forgive? Can it be that they understand that God will heal their souls no matter what Lucifer does to them while they are here? Ponder too why someone would come here as a attractive female in a dysfunctional family knowing that she will likely experience sexual harassment, incest, lust, or rape. Is it possible she wants to learn how to love and to forgive? Can it be that she understands that God will heal her soul no matter what Lucifer, working through others, does to her body? Can it be that she understands that she will be fully capable of helping others in her situation once she overcomes her experiences?

In our current culture, a probing question (and one that is counter-intuitive) is why would someone choose to be born into a wealthy family or at least in the West? We frequently intentionally overlook (or ignore) Jesus' admonition concerning one's attachment to wealth. Is it possible the wealthy (or those living in modernity) wanted to learn how to love God and others rather than things? This same principle applies to everyone who comes to this world. As Archangel Michael has told me and as I relate in other parts of this book, we pick our blood very carefully. As such, there are no victims in this world because we are all *warriors for God who came here to fight that which is far from Him*.

I was blessed when God sent Angel Simon to speak with me. He was known as "Simon the Leper"⁸⁴ when Jesus walked this Earth. As unbelievable as it seems, Simon told me that leprosy was the greatest gift God could have given him because leprosy allowed him to focus on God and the things that were of God rather than the world. Simon was born into a wealthy, noble family but his family expelled him once he contracted leprosy. Simon had prayed for God to make him a king so he could command people to love God. Instead, God made Simon king of the lepers. He learned to protect those who had no way to protect themselves. Simon, just like Mary Magdalene, has told me that he would change nothing about his life in this world. This is

one of the reasons Jesus did not heal everyone while He was here because some did not want to be healed. They had prayed to come here with their bodily infirmities in order to learn how to love and grow closer to God in that state. This is why we must never judge because each person's path is personal to that person. It is also why the phrase "*your will is done*" (or the more familiar translation "*thy will be done*") is part of the Lord's Prayer.⁸⁵

As I said earlier, I experienced great anxiety and fear before I agreed to write this book. Intellectually, I know that I prayed to God to be given the opportunity to exercise my love and faith. But it did not seem like much of an "opportunity" when I was going through the healing process. This world is not yet fully part of Heaven and, in this world's current state, there will always be perceived limitations as well as confusion. This is why it is so important for you to realize that you can always bring Heaven to yourself and those you are praying for. God continually sends Jesus, the Angels, the Holy Spirit, and the prophets to comfort all here. While Jesus has always been here, He will be returning in a form that everyone can see when enough of us pray for it to happen. God is perfect and each of our paths includes discovering God's perfection while going through difficult times. Please never forget that the Angels and the Holy Spirit are always with you as God's agents to bring to you the grace of God when you pray. I will close this chapter by reminding you what Archangel Raphael said when I asked him why we chose to come to this world – "*To learn how to love.*"

6

FREEWILL

The truth of God is a light that shines through any darkness. That light lies in you and through you. You have been chosen but you choose to be such. Free will governs all of God's children but His light remains regardless of their choices.

We have come before you in many ways at many times. Now you can just hear us without darkness. Do not dwell on the vessel but on the message and the purpose. That we have come and are here is the miracle. What we say and people can hear is the light of God.

It is time for us to come again in this manner. It is time. Light the light of God in this world my son. Dwell not on what is of this place. For it is not only a moment in time, but mere illusion. Only God is real, for the rest is not of Him, merely matter. It is whatever He wishes it to appear for His purpose. You know His purpose. You can pray for Him to change the matter to serve His purpose. That is how miracles happen.

We are coming here in numbers that this world cannot contemplate. It is time. We are here.

Archangel Michael

The concept of freewill is something I used to believe I understood but then realized I did not when the Angels began teaching me about God, Heaven, and this world. We must comprehend freewill and its many aspects if we are to begin to understand God and this gift. The experience of being in this world gives us an amazing opportunity to learn about love and forgiveness. By your choosing to be here, you have asked for the chance to grow closer to God quickly. But your success is dependent upon how you choose to respond to the temptations and attacks Lucifer will always be putting in front of you while you are here.

The most basic definition of freewill contained in a dictionary is “the power of personal self-determination.”⁸⁶ I have discovered that there is so much more to freewill than this. To begin, I know there is much confusion about God’s omnipotence and omniscience, our own freewill, and the freewill of others. Some people believe that if God knows what we will do before we do it, then we do not truly have freewill. The other argument is that if God does not know what we will do, then He cannot possibly be an omniscient God. The problem with both of these arguments is they come from our limited frame of reference. God and this gift are so much greater than what we currently understand. In this chapter, I am asking you examine freewill from a broader perspective.

To begin, ask yourself why you are here at all? Do you think it is by chance? The Holy Spirit has told me many times that God will never violate our freewill. This means we are here by choice. Archangel Michael once told me that, “*Each person who has ever been in this world in flesh prayed to God to be allowed to come here and God answered that person’s prayer.*” This means you knew about this world and Lucifer’s presence in it before you prayed to come here. You also knew that you would not have a vivid memory of who you truly are, where you came from, and why you were here.⁸⁷

When Archangel Michael told me, “*Before you were born*

into this world, you prayed to God to come here as a warrior for God to fight that which is far from God. There are no victims in this world,” I did not understand what he was saying. I also had real difficulty understanding the concept that there are no victims here. I thought surely innocent children or women who are physically beaten, raped, or sexually violated must be victims. But Archangel Michael explained that this thinking was based on my frame of reference and my perspective in this world. Michael admitted that people’s bodies are definitely assaulted while here but that is not the point. He said there are no victims here because everyone has the opportunity to respond in a way that is close to God regardless of what Lucifer does. In fact, the reason we chose to come to this world is to learn to respond in love regardless of what the dark does to us. We knew that we would move closer to God if we could begin to learn to love as God loves.⁸⁸

Once you grasp the meaning of these concepts, you realize that this life, including its challenges and difficulties, is a gift from God and an answer to your prayers. Each of us chose to come here as a *warrior for God* to learn how to love and to help this world return to its original, Heavenly state. In our daily battle, the only weapon that works is love. This last sentence appears to contain a contradiction. How do you fight with love? The answer comes in understanding what you are really fighting. Archangel Raphael has taught me, “*Fear is the opposite of love.*” So when we are confronting things that are far from God such as hate, anger, judgment, jealousy, selfishness, self-judgment, lying, or greed, what we are really confronting is fear because each of these emotions has its root cause in fear. Where love unites, fear divides. The only way to conquer fear is with love because it is through love that one learns to forgive. Once you have forgiven any injustice, then you begin to have compassion for the person creating the fear. Love prevails because in love all are reunited in God.

The Holy Spirit has explained to me that, “*God did not*

create fear.” Rather, through the exercise of our freewill, God has provided us with the opportunity to step away from Him and from love. When our choices take us farther from God, fear comes precisely because we have chosen to step away from God’s love. Fear also comes when others are doing something to us and we do not respond in love. When we allow fear into our lives, we unwittingly prevent ourselves from feeling God’s grace. This is why there is no fear when you are truly walking with God. When you are with God, you join with the Holy Spirit and your state of being is that of Heaven. This is why fear leaves when you understand that you are a child of God and that He loves you unconditionally regardless of what you have been tricked by the dark into doing or thinking you are.

When we truly walk with God, we will feel only love and compassion for others regardless of what they have done to our loved ones or ourselves. Once you grasp this, you begin to understand more about God’s essence and what each of us came here to learn. The only “weapon” that can destroy those things that have their root in fear is that which is its opposite – love. We came here to learn how to love because the more we learn about love, the closer we will move toward God. The knowledge and wisdom that we acquire about love and compassion (which we gather from our experiences here on Earth) will be part of us forever. Once we have acquired this wisdom, God then gives us the ability to help more souls throughout His Kingdom.

Archangel Michael also told me that, “*Before we came here, each of us chose our blood very carefully.*”⁸⁹ This explains why there can be so much love within a family. But there can be love that is not apparent even within dysfunctional families. Frequently a child will come to help a parent in ways that are not obvious at first. When a child abused by a parent continues to love (or learns to love) that parent in spite of the abuse, ultimately that child’s love heals and redeems the abuser. Lucifer and his helpers hurt everyone who comes here. When enough of us realize this and look past the body of the person who is

causing our pain and see Lucifer as that pain's ultimate source, then compassion and forgiveness come much easier for the soul trapped in a body that is being controlled by the dark. This is just another reason God has told us not to judge one another. It is also why Jesus included in the Lord's Prayer the wording, "*be delivered from the evil one.*"

Michael has also told me you know whether you will be a male or a female before you come. Think what this information means. When you know beforehand who your parents and siblings (if any) will be, you have a good idea of what you will experience while here. If your parents are drug addicts or alcoholics, you know your life will be much different from those whose parents do not suffer from these afflictions. If you choose to come to parents in Africa, you know your life there will be different from those who choose to come to parents who live in the United States, Europe, Asia, Russia, China, India, Australia, etc. Even within the United States, if your parents are of African or Native American descent, your life will be very different from those whose parents are of European or Asian descent. The gift of freewill is so much more than we can imagine.

At one time I thought freewill was limited to this world. I believed that when we returned to Heaven, we remained in a form of static bliss. The bliss is true, but you always have freewill and Heaven is never static. Look at Lucifer. His fall occurred when he was one of the four Angels appointed by God to be in charge of this world.⁹⁰ Freewill is a gift of love from God that allows us to reject Him at any time if we wish to do so. But it is the same gift that allows us to reach for God and His love regardless of our circumstances. There are so many dimensions to freewill that we do not understand but need to.

Freewill is also the gift that protects us once we make our own decisions versus just doing what we have been told or taught to do it. Once you learn to exercise your own freewill to quit doing a certain act that you know is against God's plan for your life, then you will defend that decision with all that

you are. In explaining this concept, Archangel Michael used the analogy of conquered land in warfare. He said once one country has conquered another country's land, the conqueror expends great effort to defend this new land because of the high cost it paid to obtain it. It is the same when a person makes a difficult decision to reject something that is far from God. Once you have exercised your freewill and gone through the fire to reject a trait that is far from God, you will rarely backslide. The Angels refer to the negative feelings we experience when we have chosen to be far from God as "the fire." This fire is also the gift from God that alerts you to the problem. This is why Lucifer never wins. You can be distracted when you follow the evil one but you are never happy and filled with joy because the fire always accompanies your choices. Ultimately, that same fire burns away the impurities that have heretofore kept you from reaching your goal. It is also the "great cost" that prevents you from changing your mind. Once you have gone through the fire, you have "earned" your goal and do not want to repeat the steps it took you to reach your present destination.

God's gift of freewill also explains why this world looks the way it currently does. While God will not violate our freewill, He can use each choice we make to teach us the lessons we prayed to learn while here. One of Lucifer's tricks has been to convince us that this world is no longer part of Heaven but nothing could be further from the truth. The Angels of the Lord can only exist in Heaven so Heaven is always here. Lucifer has brought us the concept of mortality.⁹¹ This is how Lucifer has tricked us into being compatible with him and why we constantly live somewhere on the line between Heaven and hell. This is the battle that is constantly waged in our minds. Just as Dante Alighieri wrote in his book, *The Divine Comedy*, there are various stages of separation from God with hell being the farthest point. Hell is what we experience when we can no longer feel God's presence or love. Because we are the ones who initiated this separation, we are the only ones who can initiate

our redemption. God's hand is always reaching out to us but we have to grasp it. Once that happens, the Holy Spirit always comes.

Hell is a place that we can find whether we have a body or not. Most addicts are in hell regardless of the substance or activity they are addicted to. What is not readily apparent is that Lucifer has very limited power. This is why he has to trick us into going to hell because he cannot force anyone to do anything. This is also why there is nothing to fear from the dark. God knew before all time what Lucifer would do and when he would do it. But God also knew that He could use this world to teach us how to love. Never doubt God's perfect plan for your life or His ability to help you attain what you prayed for before you came.

If you look at the lives of many of the prophets⁹² and the information they brought to their people, you will see that over time the prophets' messages were adulterated one small shift at a time. After these "small shifts" occurred, the original concepts the prophets brought became confused or lost. This is how Lucifer works. He has to trick people (and translators or scribes) little by little to shift their focus. This is why Archangel Raphael has told me, "*Lie upon lie has become the truth.*" But this shift does not prevent God from working His plan for us in this world. It does explain, though, why this world does not always look like Heaven. It also explains why so many of us would pray for the opportunity to come to this world to help those here who are stuck and suffering.

In praying to come to this world, you had faith that your experiences here would help you move closer to God. This does not mean that being treated in a manner that is far from God is a good thing or that God likes it when we are being hurt. What it means is that we understood that God's love would heal all of the damage that Lucifer or his followers could ever do to us. It also means that we will be able to learn more about God and His love through overcoming the challenges the dark puts before us while we are here. We then keep this wisdom for eternity and

can use it to help others that we could not have helped before we came. This is God's perfect circle of love. You pray to come here to help others and are helped in the process.

Now I would ask that you look at this world from another perspective. If learning to love is the way to grow closer to God, then what better place to go than a world where you are guaranteed to see the face of evil? What better place to be given the opportunity to master forgiveness and learn unconditional love? While God can teach you about love without hate being present, this environment permits quick learning because this world contains people who are at strikingly different levels of development. This contrast is why you can learn compassion, love, and forgiveness very quickly. Before you came here, you knew you would experience things that were the opposite of love. But you also knew that when you learned to respond only in love, you would begin to learn some of the lessons that God wants to teach all of His children. God sent Jesus to show us how to live and this is why He is our example to follow.

Three concepts must be understood in order to move closer to God in this world. First, you need faith, and faith by definition cannot be based on reason or knowledge. It is faith that God is here for you as well as for others. True faith means you have been "born of the spirit" or "born from above" with the belief and trust in God a little child demonstrates. The second concept is learning to eliminate fear from your life. Fear is only brought by the dark and when you learn to exclude it from your being, you have aligned yourself with God and His Holy Spirit. The third concept is selfless love for another. You cannot completely love another if fear is present. True love can only be selfless. When you worry about the self, you have shaded your love with fear. The following is what Archangel Michael has told me:

To choose to be here in this manifestation is to know suffering.⁹³ To know suffering and to forgive is to know the Holy Spirit. To know the Holy Spirit is to know God and feel the love of The Christ through Us. To

know the suffering of others and to pray to resolve it into what is of God is bringing God's grace here. God's grace is the love of The Christ, which knows and understands and fulfills. This is God. This is His love. This is what is real. This is our path.

To see suffering and to feel it of and in others is to know suffering. You did not come to suffer, but to resolve it into God's grace. Your learning love has set you free. Now you may free the world.

Fear or doubt has no place in freedom. Forgiveness is apparent when you can no longer judge because you know the suffering in all in this manifestation. What is there to forgive when you know compassion? It becomes as automatic as breath in this manifestation. To truly know and to forgive and be forgiven is to be freed. This is true freedom for all. It is the path to God, the Father.

Through Archangel Michael's words, it is clear that unconditional love means living without judgment or fear because the right to judge is the province of God alone. Before the Angels came to me in a way that I could not deny, I believed that I understood who was close to God and who was far from Him. I even had a habit of announcing such judgments about others with certainty. One of the most important things I have learned since that time is that I was incorrect in virtually every judgment I had made about another person. I am not God, so how could I know what was in another's heart when he or she made a decision? How could I know that person's intent or the experiences that shaped him or her?

As the Holy Spirit has explained to me, intent makes all the difference from Heaven's perspective. Let us take the following example. You come home from work and you turn on the television to your local news channel. A reporter is playing a clip from a convenience store surveillance tape that shows a picture of a young teenager stealing groceries and running out of the

store. Although it would be very tempting to label the 13-year-old boy a juvenile delinquent, what the surveillance tape did not show us is why the 13-year-old boy did what he did. What would you think if you knew that the young boy took the groceries to feed his hungry brothers and sisters, and that, although he was also hungry, he did not take even one bite of the food himself? What would you think if you knew that the child's mother was addicted to drugs and had spent the last of the family's money the previous week on these drugs? What would you think if you knew that his father had not been home in over a month? What would you think if you knew that the boy ran to his church after he delivered the food to his siblings and confessed his sin to the local priest? Chances are that knowing any of these details would change your perspective completely. Although God gave all of His children freewill, the circumstances in this young boy's life may have made him believe that he had no choice but to do something far from God in an attempt to love and care for his family. How many of us have ever felt like this? If I look back at my life, there are many times when my fear prevented me from seeing that I truly had my freewill. Now that I understand freewill is a gift given to each of us by God, I know another person can never take it from me.

Freewill also allows God to work in your life. Look at Jesus and what He told us. He said, "*All that I do is through the work of the Father.*"⁹⁴ God was constantly working in and through Jesus, but God would not have worked through Jesus unless Jesus gave God permission. Jesus, through the exercise of His freewill, created the space that allowed God to work in and through Him. These are two important concepts that Archangel Michael has explained to me. First he said, "*Do not diminish the Father with the Son.*" Jesus was never confused on this point, but we Christians sometimes lose sight of this. Second, Archangel Michael told me, "*Do not emphasize the divine aspect of Jesus at the expense of His humanity.*" Jesus came to show us how to live. When we diminish Jesus' humanity, we are telling ourselves

that we cannot live in the same manner Jesus lived. Please do not embrace this lie because, once this lie is accepted, we have limited our potential to serve God while here. If Jesus' life were impossible for us to copy, why did Jesus tell us otherwise? Look what He said as recorded at John 14:12-14:

Amen, amen, I am telling you, that whoever believes in me, these works that I do, they will also do; and that greater than these they will do, [now] that I go to the Father. And whatever you ask through my name, I will do for you, so that the Father is glorified through the Son. And if you ask me in my name, I will do it.

When we refuse to emulate the path Jesus so clearly laid before us, we have been tricked into limiting our growth as souls because Jesus' path is the path to Heaven. The idea that Jesus was able to walk the path to God while we cannot is wrong and is one of Lucifer's tricks. This is why it is so important for us to understand that we can live as Jesus did. In fact, this is precisely why Jesus came – to give us an example to follow. God's rules are God's rules though. To follow Jesus' example, we have to do the same thing Jesus did. Once we use our freewill to create the space, God and His Heavenly Host of Angels will always come. They only need a moment and in that moment you will feel God as you begin your own journey back to what you have always been – a child of God who is loved unconditionally.

God's essence is love and this is why there is no fear in God. Part of your journey back to God is to understand why you are afraid. Once you look at your life and forgive those who hurt you, you can then ask God to remove that pain and fear from you. Look at part of the quote from Archangel Michael again - "*Fear or doubt has no place in freedom.*" This means your freedom comes once you know God and understand that He is part of you. To attain this state, you have to exercise your freewill to go through the healing process. This process involves

prayer and your willingness to do the personal reflection and introspection it takes to heal. Once you do these things, you can begin to eliminate fear from your life. The more you allow God to come, the less space is left for the dark. As Raphael has told me, fear and faith are mutually incompatible because one always eliminates the other. Heaven is a state of being with complete faith in God. Hell is a place of complete fear. This paragraph briefly describes the battle that defines our time in this world.

By the time I began this process over seven years ago, I had buried and “managed” my fear so completely that I did not realize I lived with constant fear. I look back now and can see that I had carefully constructed my life so that I did not have to address those things that caused me fear. By choosing not to confront my fears, I had given Lucifer a place to sit inside of me – a place that should have been reserved for God alone. Now that the Holy Spirit has helped me to face my fears and heal from my wounds, the void in me is being lifted because God has begun to fill these holes in my soul with His essence. It can be the same for you.

When you exercise your freewill to ask to feel God and His grace, He will always come.⁹⁵ This is why prayer is so important. In each moment of prayer, you have aligned yourself with God. God will always answer your prayers when you are asking for things that are close to Him and do not hurt others. But remember what I said earlier about unconsciously judging others. If we pray for another person to receive something we want that person to have, then our prayer is not really about the other person. This is precisely why the Lord’s Prayer says, “*Your will is done, in Heaven as on Earth.*”⁹⁶ We do not know what the other person prayed for when he or she came to this world and, therefore, do not know what this person hoped to overcome or experience while here. But God knows and as Archangel Michael has told me, “*No prayer is ever wasted.*”

The Holy Spirit has also explained to me that there is no hierarchy in Heaven. This means we need to examine why we

are frequently trying to secure a place that is above others in this world. Lucifer has brought to humanity his obsession with power and hierarchy. You can see Lucifer's tricks at work when some attempt to defend their position by thinking they are higher, better, or more entitled than others. In fact, many religions and individuals incorrectly cite portions of the Bible as proof that they are correct. However, nowhere in the Bible does God give us dominion (or authority) over another person. But we do have dominion and authority over our own bodies so we have the option to offer them to God. When we do this, we become God's eyes, hands, and feet in this world to serve and help others consistent with our prayers. This is what Jesus did. Jesus used His freewill to offer His earthly body to God to be used for God's purposes. Jesus also offered Himself to us so we would have a living example of how to order and live our lives while here. Our common understanding is that Jesus came to walk to the Cross in order to atone for our sins. This is true, and this act of faith should never be diminished. But Jesus also came to show us how to live. Why do you think He referred to Himself as the Son of Man?⁹⁷ He showed us the path to walk in this life.

The opportunity we have to offer ourselves to God is a gift from God as well as a magnificent expression of how much God loves us. When you offer your own body to God, God will use you to help other souls just as God did with Jesus. In order for you to be that hollow vessel for God to fill, you have to maintain a state of being that is of God as opposed to of the self.⁹⁸ With God, this state is moment to moment and you can choose to change your offer at any time and God will immediately leave.⁹⁹ Contrast God's rules with how the dark operates. The dark does not respect your freewill and will not leave just because you ask. Just ask any addict who has tried to confront his or her addiction.

Heaven is a state of being that can be felt when you have aligned yourself with God. This is why Heaven can be found while you are in a body. This is also why this world will return to its original state when enough of us pray for this change to

occur. The only reason we are not there now is because Lucifer has tricked us into believing his lies. But his lies are only an illusion and our prayers will bring God's love, which has real power. This is why our prayers are so important. God wants us to heal from the dark's tricks so that we will find the joy that God always intended for us to have while we are in this world.

When we are born in a body, one strong innate instinct is self-preservation. This is why you are on the path to knowing God in His fullness when your faith in Him is stronger than your instinct for self-preservation. If you are worried about the self, you have allowed yourself to enter Lucifer's territory. This is the constant battle that we experience while in flesh. When you are worried about the self, God cannot fill that space because selfishness is not of God. Instead, Lucifer and those who serve him will rush in. Just as nature abhors a vacuum, no space inside of you is ever empty. While God respects your freewill and will leave the instant you ask Him to, Lucifer and those who serve him do not. At every instant while you are on this Earth, you are living somewhere on the continuum between God and Lucifer.

Jesus, through His faith and the exercise of His freewill, was completely filled with God, but Jesus did not get to that state by accident. Jesus arrived there by following the principles He taught us as recorded in the Bible. We too can arrive at this state when we follow Jesus' path. Jesus showed us how to live by His example and God has given us the ability to follow Jesus if we will allow ourselves to be "*born from above.*" But to be "*born from above,*" you have to ask the Holy Spirit into your life so that you are again filled with God. This relationship with God is an instant-to-instant choice and the battlefield is always at the level of your freewill. Lucifer understands this concept and is continually trying either to trick you into believing things that make it difficult for you to feel God's presence or to distract you so you do not even contemplate the issue. In either instance, you have given Lucifer the opportunity to come. When Lucifer deceives us into accepting that we have done something

wrong or he gets us to do things that are far from God, we also give Lucifer a space inside ourselves. Lucifer has no physical body and very little power so he needs to work through us to accomplish his objectives. When you judge yourself as being far from God, you have given Lucifer or his helpers a place to sit. If you judge others, then you have left space within yourself that Lucifer or those he controls will fill because judgment is a form of fear. As I said earlier, once Lucifer comes, he will not give back the territory he took from you without a fight. The perfect example of this principle is addiction. The addict desperately wants to change his behavior but something keeps pulling him back. This explains why addiction is a spiritual battle as much as it is a physical one. When someone blames himself for things done to him, this lie creates pain. Lucifer knows the body can be tricked into believing that alcohol or drugs will ease this pain. Lucifer's hell is an endless loop of pain followed by momentary relief followed by more pain. Lucifer's final trick is to convince us that we can actually hide from God. God is love and light and nothing escapes God's gaze. Jesus went to the Cross to show us that our sins have already been forgiven, which means there is no reason to hide. Besides, does anyone really believe he or she can really hide from God? But this is a trick Lucifer continually uses to convince us we can.

The mistakes Adam and Eve made as recounted in Genesis are proof of the level of deception that Lucifer unleashes on us daily.¹⁰⁰ In order for Lucifer to trick us, he has to first break our trust and faith in God. At Genesis 3:4, Lucifer told Eve that God had lied to her and she believed Lucifer. This is the moment her trust in God was broken and is a good example of Lucifer's first trick. Next Eve gave the fruit to her husband because she loved him. This demonstrates another trick Lucifer uses to twist one's love for another if that person is not grounded in God. Once they had been deceived twice, Adam and Eve saw themselves as naked and covered themselves. When you have been tricked into believing you did something against God, Lucifer convinces

you that you need to hide when he brings you shame. These are all coping mechanisms that Lucifer tells you will work. First the dark hurts you and convinces you it was your fault. Once you own that lie, you start defending Lucifer's actions. The next step in your negative downward progression is to find a way to cope with the self-created guilt the dark brought your way. This explains our culture's need for alcohol, certain prescription drugs, and recreational drugs. These are God substitutes we use as diversions to avoid confronting the real issues. This is also an example of self-preservation at work because you will do what you think is necessary to cope with the pain of self-judgment that the dark always brings. In reality, you have been deceived into defending Lucifer's space and do not realize it.

The good news is that Lucifer's tricks lose their effectiveness once they have been exposed. Lucifer cannot stand scrutiny because his control over us is built on lies. When these lies are seen for what they are, you can regain control over your life. The only power Lucifer has is the ability to trick you into believing you are unworthy of God's love. This is so wrong on its face that Lucifer must always work in the dark to be successful. Contrast this with the true power of God. God's power is built on unconditional love and there is nothing stronger than this. Unconditional means just that. No matter what you have done (or been tricked into doing), God's unconditional love is always there and is always stronger than any self-loathing you have embraced. Remember, though, that God will not violate your freewill or force His way into your life. This is why your looking at your life is so important in your development as a soul. You are the one who condemned yourself and therefore you are the one who must initiate your own redemption.

Before I close this chapter, I want to explore two additional concepts. First, let us examine who we really are and see who we are related to. At Genesis 3:20, it is recorded that, "*Adam named his wife Eve, because she would become the mother of all the living.*" Have you ever asked yourself what God was

telling us with this story? Archangel Michael recently told me God wanted us to realize that everyone on this planet had the same “first parents” and are part of the same family. As such, we are all brothers and sisters even though we may not look the same. This means every war has been a civil war because we are all related and our momentary skin color, religion, or the geographic location of our birth does nothing to change that. Lucifer has created the divisions and the hate we see around us because Lucifer is afraid to be alone. He spends his time and energy creating ways to turn us into what he has decided he is – empty, terrified, alone, and one who believes he is unworthy of love. Jesus instructed us to “*like our enemy*” and “*love your enemies*” because, under God, we have no enemy – only brothers and sisters. Remember what Jesus said as recorded in Matthew and Luke:

Matthew 5:43-44: You heard it said, “Love your best friend and hate your enemy.” But, I am telling you, like your enemy and bless those who curse you and do good to those who hate you and pray for those who exploit you and leave you bare.

Luke 6:27-28: But to you who listen, I say, Love your enemies and do good to those who hate you. And bless those who curse you and pray for those who exploit you.

Second, I want to explore our freewill in the context of the parable of the prodigal son. Accept for the moment that before you came to this world you knew Lucifer was here. Couple that information with two concepts Michael has told me. First, “*there are no victims here*” and second “*before we came, each of us picked our blood very carefully.*” This means you had a good idea what you would be taught by those who would raise you. You also had a very good idea of what your home life would be as a child. When I judged myself for the mistakes I made in raising my children, Archangel Michael would repeatedly remind me that “*you can only learn what you have been taught and*

you can only teach what you have learned.” The inescapable conclusion from this knowledge is that the mistakes each of us has made and the sins each of us has committed are most often based upon learned behaviors that we statistically knew we would fall prey to. Therefore, it is not what we have done that is important. Rather, it is how we learn to respond once we are in the fire we knew would come. As Jeremiah has told me, *“It is the fire that burns away the impurities.”* Once we learn to forgive those who taught us incorrectly, those who hurt us, and then ourselves, we will have found what we wanted to find when we chose to come here. This means all of us are prodigal sons or daughters by choice. Each of us wanted to move closer to God by learning to overcome the very things we had a good idea we would be taught. This is also why you should never judge another. The only escape from any of these self-created traps is love, compassion, and forgiveness. Once you find this love, you will have found the faith that allows God to heal you. As Archangel Michael has told me, *“Faith is the answer to the Great Mystery.”*

In this world, rarely does one have the direct experiences with Heaven that I have had. But I would not be having these experiences if Heaven were not readying this world for the return of The Christ. When we understand that the security and comfort we crave already exists in our relationship with God, this world will shift. My prayer is that you will follow the path I am taking. When you do, you will experience God, Jesus (The Christ), and the Holy Spirit in a way that is perfect for you.

7

LOVE AND FAITH

Love, my Son, only love. In it you will find His grace. In it you will find forgiveness. In it will you find your true self; that which is of God. Love is not exhausted, forever. Love is not diminished, forever. Love is what is real, forever. It is that which is Heaven and of Him.

For love as in Heaven is not what people in flesh here can yet understand. It is part of the turning to Heaven that is here and returning in full to this world. The understanding is coming. The love of God is here. Grasp it, always. Hold it, always. Bring it to others, always.

Love is directed to guide, to be given and not to be withheld. Fear of loss of love is not of God, for He loves always.

Love is a learning, a Gift from Him, the way to Him. In it, and only in it, will people follow and be all that they too are. Never in fear of loss my Son. It is His flock. His will be done. His Gift to you is Knowing Him and Knowing His love and allowing you to share Him here with all of His children. Always treat them as He has treated you.

Go with God, my Son. His power goes before you aligned with Him.

Archangel Michael

At times, I have had great difficulty understanding what Archangel Michael tells me. However, how could I not proclaim what I know to be true and write this book if the wisdom comes from God, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit. But you need to realize that you too have the same backing and support when you align yourself with God. All you have to do is change your frame of reference in such a way that you do not limit God. As humans, we have a natural resistance to change. Plus, we assume we will always have more time. This is why I want you to remind yourself of the urgency of this change. As Archangel Michael recently told me, “*What you do in this life echoes in eternity.*”¹⁰¹ What we sometimes lose sight of is that everyone here is in the same place. Everyone has choices born of freewill and everyone can exercise his or her choices to find God or not. The initial stumbling block each of us must overcome is fear. When God spoke to me He said “[*My*] words shall be heard from the mountains to the oceans throughout this world.” Intellectually, I knew that I prayed to have this opportunity to help bring God’s children back to Him, but it was hard to keep that in mind as I was fighting my own fears while finishing this book. I am not the person I was when Archangel Michael first began coming to me, and I will not be who I am today when I exit my body. It is the same for everyone here. Every created being (whether in a body or not) is always moving closer to or further from God every moment because the journey is never a straight line. While you will always feel the Holy Spirit’s presence when you pray, most of us have been tricked by the dark into spending time focused on the things of this world. When we do this, we necessarily move away from God. This is why everyone’s journey is circuitous because that is our freewill at work.

As I write this, I have just finished reading *The Shack: Where Tragedy Confronts Eternity* by William P. Young (hereinafter “*The Shack*”). While Mr. Young’s book is fiction, what I have experienced and recount for you in this book is not. But many of the lessons are the same except that God is God and (at least

within my limited knowledge) He never appears as anything else.¹⁰² That is why God sends His Angels before Him as His agents and messengers. As created beings, they derive their power from God but seem more approachable. We need to realize, though, that there is a piece of God in every living thing, whether it be an Angel, an animal, a plant, or a human being. So God is always here and always with us even though we do not generally realize it. In fact, God specifically designed this world so we would not realize it without first finding faith.

I want to return to *The Shack* and its message because Mr. Young was clearly hearing from the Holy Spirit as he wrote his masterpiece. In *The Shack*, Mr. Young wrote, “if anything matters then everything matters. Because you are important, everything you do is important. Every time you forgive, the universe changes; every time you reach out and touch a heart or a life, the world changes; with every kindness and service, seen or unseen, my [The Holy Spirit’s] purposes are accomplished and nothing will be the same again.” Archangel Raphael touched on this theme at prayer meeting I attended recently. Raphael was explaining that God’s laws are immutable and unchanging just as gravity is in our thinking. Raphael said that one of God’s laws is that self-less love will overcome and heal any damage the dark has done, which is exactly what Mr. Young was teaching in *The Shack*. Love and forgiveness change those we forgive as well as ourselves because this is God’s law of self-less love in practice. Not surprisingly, it is one of the laws that Jesus’ life exemplified.

Another one of God’s laws is that self-judgment hinders our ability to serve God and bring His love to others. This is because self-judgment is a form of fear and, when we believe we are unworthy to help others or serve God, God respects our freewill. Self-judgment means we have chosen to be less than pure vessels for God’s love to pass through. Remember that Lucifer knows how God designed this world to function because God did not remove that knowledge from Lucifer when he fell. Since Lucifer

has no power other than what we give him, he must trick us into letting him hurt us. One of Lucifer's best tricks is to get us to believe we are unworthy of serving God and this is what happens when we embrace self-judgment. All in this world are imperfect because this world was never designed for perfection. We left Heaven to come to learn something and here we learn best when we overcome our mistakes and sins. Raphael drove this point home recently when he told me, *"God has already forgiven you for your sins and Jesus went to the Cross to demonstrate this love. This means your self-judgment is a form of dishonoring your Father."* These are strong words from Heaven and words we need to take to heart if we are to be all we prayed to be before we came.

Most of us have been tricked into believing that we are inadequate and unqualified to bring God to others. As I said above, we need to see this as just another lie brought to us by Lucifer. I would ask you to consider this question. Who is more qualified than you to bring love to your parents, your children, or your friends? When most of us realize we are children of God who can be used by God to help all souls whom we love, this world will shift back to what it was intended to be. God originally made this world as another iteration of Heaven where souls could go to experience God's love. But since Lucifer's fall, souls in this world have been continually assaulted by the dark. Thankfully, God has now said it is time for this world to return to its original state.

Everyone here is a child of God who can allow the Holy Spirit to enter him or her to help God's love fill this world. Although it is not easy, it is real and it will begin to feel more right than anything you have previously experienced once you embark on your own personal journey of discovery. Remember that you have the full support of God and His Heavenly Host. Before you begin though, I suggest that you challenge the worldview that you were taught and unwittingly imposed on yourself because this will allow the Holy Spirit to help you more. Jesus did not

accomplish what He did alone and God does not expect you to do it alone either. Let me quote first from John and then from Acts:

John 14: 15-18: *If you love me, observe my commandments. And I will request it of my Father and another Advocate he will send you, who will be with you forever. **The Spirit of Truth whom the world could not receive because they could not see or know Him. But you know Him, for He lives among you and through you is manifested. I will not leave you orphaned. For I will return to you soon.*** (Emphasis mine.)

Acts 1:1-8: *The first letter I wrote you, O theologian, was about all the things our Lord Jesus did and taught, until the day in which He ascended, after He commanded the apostles, those that He chose by the Holy Spirit. Those to whom he also showed himself while alive after he Sorrowed, through many signs during the Forty days, as He appeared to them and told them about the Kingdom of God. And as he ate bread with them, he instructed them, **“Do not abandon Jerusalem, except hold fast to the calling from the Father, which you have heard for me, That John baptized by water, and you will baptize by the Holy Spirit, after not too many days.”** Those that gathered, however, asked Him, saying to Him, **“Our Lord, are you at this time going to return the kingdom to Israel?”** He told them, **“It is not for you to know that time or the ages, these the Father designates through His own authority. Except, the Holy Spirit shall come upon you, you shall receive Power and you will witness for me in Jerusalem and all of Judea, and also in the land of Samaritans, and to the outskirts of the Earth.”** (Emphasis mine.)*

God has authorized the Holy Spirit to guide and minister to each of His children. Once we use our freewill to ask the Holy Spirit to help us, everything will change. Every person has the

capacity to walk the same path to the Father that the Son laid out for us to follow. As recorded at John 8:10-14, Jesus said:

Do you not believe that I am in my Father and my Father is in me?

And these words that I speak, I do not speak of myself. The Father who dwells in me, He performs these works. Believe [it] that I am in my Father, and my Father is in me; and if not, believe [then] in the works. Amen, amen, I am telling you, that whoever believes in me, these works that I do, they will also do; and that greater than these they will do, [now] that I go to the Father. And whatever you ask through my name, I will do for you, so that the Father is glorified through the Son. And if you ask me in my name, I will do it.

There is only one God and He is in all of us. The key to rediscovering God inside of you is your starting to love as God loves. It is in and through unconditional love that you find God and the path of The Christ. Look again at part of the message Archangel Michael sent to me that I placed at the beginning of this chapter.

Love, my Son, only love. In it you will find His grace. In it you will find forgiveness. In it will you find your true self; that which is of God. Love is not exhausted, forever. Love is not diminished, forever. Love is what is real, forever. It is that which is Heaven and of Him.

This is poetry from God coming through Archangel Michael. Love is where God resides and, when you find love, you will find Him. I would like to refer you to words from the prophet Joel that are recounted by Peter. After the apostles at Pentecost received the gift of the Holy Spirit, Peter stood and said the words that are recorded at Acts 2:14-21:

And afterwards, there rose Simon Keepa [Peter,] together with the eleven apostles, and he raised his voice and told them, “Jewish men, and all who live in Jerusalem, this is so that you may know, hear my words. For you should not expect that they are drunk, but behold, it is not even the third hour yet. Except, this is what was spoken by the prophet Joel”:

It will be in the final day, said the Lord, I will pour my Spirit over all flesh, And their sons and daughters shall prophesy, And their grandparents shall see visions, And their priests shall dream dreams, And over my servants over their mothers, I will pour out my Spirit, in those days And they will prophesy. And I will grant signs in Heaven, and greatness on the Earth, Blood and fire, And the sweet smell of burning incense. The sun will be in mourning, glory and power. And it shall come to pass, Whoever calls on the name of the Lord shall live. (Emphasis mine.)

We are now in this time spoken of in Joel. Anyone who wants the indwelling of God’s Spirit need only ask. The majesty and love of God is apparent in how He has approached and guided me and it will be the same for you. But please remember that there is no compulsion in love, and so God will never force Himself into your life. However, God will wait for an eternity for you to choose to return home to Him. And when you do, using Archangel Michael’s words, the results will be “*glorious beyond contemplation.*”

A conversation from Mr. Young’s book, *The Shack*, that perfectly exemplifies Michael’s message is the following:

“Remember, the people who know me [Jesus] are the ones who are free to live and love without any agenda.”

“Is that what it means to be a Christian?” It sounded kind of stupid as Mack said it, but it was how he was trying to sum everything up in his mind.

“Who said anything about being a Christian? I’m not a Christian.”

The idea struck Mack as odd and unexpected and he couldn’t keep himself from grinning. “No, I suppose you aren’t.”

They arrived at the door of the workshop. Again Jesus stopped. “Those who love me come from every system that exists. They were Buddhists or Mormons, Baptists or Muslim, Democrats, Republicans, and many who don’t vote or are not part of any Sunday morning religious institutions. I have followers who were murderers and many who were self-righteous. Some were bankers and bookies, Americans and Iraqis, Jews and Palistinians. I have no desire to make them Christian, but I do want to join them in their transformation into sons and daughters of my Papa [God], into my brothers and sisters, into my Beloved.”

“Does that mean,” asked Mack, “that all roads will lead to you?”

“Not at all,” smiled Jesus as he reached for the door handle to the shop. “Most roads don’t lead anywhere. What it does mean is that I will travel any road to find you.”

This conversation from *The Shack* shows that the book you are now reading is just one of many avenues God is using to awaken those who have prayed at any point in their life to feel His grace. Think about all of humanity’s scientific discoveries. The item or process that was “discovered” was already there, but it took someone to understand it for the first time and then explain it. Excitement comes with discovery. However, once

we think we understand something, the excitement dissipates. Please do not let this happen when you think you understand that God loves you and is here for you. God lives at eternity and so you will always have more to learn. Archangel Michael has told me that he is over two billion years old and yet God teaches him something new each day. Boredom does not exist in Heaven because God continually reveals new parts of Himself forever.

I consider myself to be one of the most blessed individuals who ever walked this Earth because God has given me direct access to Him, His Son, the Holy Spirit, and His Angels. But God and the Holy Spirit would like to provide this same opportunity to anyone who desires to serve Him. In this book, I have described my experiences when God, Jesus, the Holy Spirit, and individual Angels spoke directly to me at different times. Therefore, for me, God, Jesus, the Holy Spirit, individual Angels, and Heaven are real because the paranormal has become normal. I am beyond taking anything on faith because I personally know those whom God has sent before me. God has also allowed me to experience Heaven. But God did not give me these experiences so I would know He existed. I first had to have the faith that Heaven was here before God allowed me to experience it. Were it otherwise, God would have violated my freewill and this He will not do. It will be the same for you.

On December 9, 2008, Archangel Michael sent me the following message:

Consider the efforts of Heaven to reach you, and those in this world. It is every moment. God seeks to reach all His children. He loves us all. He rallies those of us in the Holy Spirit to His will to each of their resurrections.

Do not focus on how hard it is to be all that you are in this world. Rather, be that which is of Him. Faith is the fulfillment of His grace, for in it the circle of love turns for eternity. The love of Heaven lifting all those

who were lost for a time, and they in turn joining us to lift others, forever.

The world Lucifer created with lies and tricks demands “proof” to accept what is, yet it is necessarily blind to the proof of God all around them. What greater proof can God provide than the life with which He graced us all. You move within the world made by God. You move within us and us within you, as was prophesied and willed by Him. It is life within life, working together towards the perfection that is rejoining the Father. That is why you can feel so very much. For you and your feelings of life are part of God, proof which requires faith to grow.

The Holy Spirit is here as promised by the Son for the world. His coming gave us new ways to manifest the love of the Father in this world. He and it was a gift from God for those of us in Heaven seeking to serve His will. God gave us the means to communicate clearly His will so that we could guide his children towards Him. We are here, we love and seek to love more. We can enter all His children and they us with faith and love. There can be no fear in this, for it is Heaven and His grace. That is ‘joining the Holy Spirit’ and with it, rejoining with God.

The war between that of Heaven and that of Mortality is coming to an end.

As of this writing, I have spent thousands of hours in direct conversations with Angels over more than seven years. Any question I wanted answered, I have had answered provided the answer did not infringe on someone else’s freewill or my own. In short, I have had my own personal seven-year walk to Emmaus¹⁰³ in the company of God, Jesus, the Holy Spirit, Angels, and one prophet, Jeremiah. You too can have your own experiences with God and His Heavenly Hosts when you break through your own fear and pray to be a vessel for God. You may

not want to (or need to) speak personally to an Angel while in this world, which is just fine. Look at what Jesus told Thomas as recounted at John 20:27-29:

*And he said to Thomas, “Come here with your finger and see my hands and take your hand and press it into my side, and be not an unbeliever, but a believer.” And Thomas replied and said to him, “My Lord and my God!” Jesus said to him, “Now that you have seen me, you believe? **Blessed are they that do not see me and believe.**” (Emphasis mine.)*

Each of us is given repeated chances to learn faith and understand true love in this world. As Archangel Michael has told me, “*In faith there is no fear because there is no fear in love.*” When Archangel Michael uses the word “faith,” he does not mean “faith that there is a God.” Rather, he means “faith that God is here for you.” God is not the God posited by deists.¹⁰⁴ Rather, God is a personal God who is immediately available to every soul He has placed on this Earth. Any religious concept created by humanity that excludes any of God’s children is not consistent with the love of God. Why would God create someone to later punish or exclude him or her? But Lucifer has tricked some of us into hiding from God because of what Lucifer has done to us or tricked us into doing. This is why I was asked to write this book. It is time for Lucifer’s tricks to be exposed for what they are. God’s love is unconditional and nothing you hear from the dark should convince you otherwise.

As the Holy Spirit has explained and demonstrated to me, Angels can sit in anything that once held life or currently holds life. This includes water, certain types of stones, trees, plants, animals, and people.¹⁰⁵ The first time I spoke with Archangel Michael, he appeared to me through someone’s body who had great love for me.¹⁰⁶ Archangel Michael later explained to me that he had to appear in this manner because he knew that I would be too afraid to handle him coming another way.

Therefore, he used the body of someone I had known, trusted, and loved for more than a decade. Since I knew this person so well, I immediately knew that the person speaking to me was not my friend when Archangel Michael came into his body. The difference between my friend and Michael was immediately apparent to me. I was afraid at the first meeting because I did not know whether this new experience was “of God” and God did not give me an instruction sheet. Now a quiet calm comes over me and I feel safe and comfortable every time I speak with any Angel. Whenever an Angel comes in this form, the space around that Angel is immediately part of Heaven because Angels of the Lord only live in Heaven. This is why being in an Angel’s direct presence brings you such peace.

This does not mean that I have never felt fear in anticipation of speaking with one of God’s Heavenly Messengers. There have been times when I experienced fear, especially during the process of looking at my life. I was afraid to feel the pain associated with my memories, and there were many times when I was afraid that I might disappoint The Holy Spirit. Therefore, I can personally attest to the accounts in the Bible of people being afraid in the presence of Angels as being true. I now know, though, that there is nothing to fear, and I have a very personal relationship with many of the Angels whom God allows to appear before me.

The Appendix of Angels in this book lists the Angels I have spoken to along with a brief summary of who they are. I am not the same person who started this journey and I will not be the same person when my journey in this world ends. The joy that God has brought to me is the same joy that He will give to you if you are willing to overcome your own fear and look. Archangel Raphael once told me, “*All stop in their spiritual journey at the point fear overtakes them.*”¹⁰⁷ He also said, “*You are what Lucifer keeps you from becoming.*” These are concepts we need to focus on if we are to reach our potential while here. Archangel Michael followed up on Raphael’s words when he told me “*The measure of your love is the absence of fear.*” These are words

from God coming through His Angels. Fear is never a positive and when you understand you can eliminate it from your life, you will make a giant move toward God.

In addressing my own fear, I have learned that God only gives me what I can handle at each moment. Therefore, if your growth mirrors mine, it will be like a rheostat. Sometimes you grow closer to God and sometimes your fear takes you further from Him. This is why we need to understand that God is always working for us at multiple levels. Regardless of where I was at a particular time, when I was helping someone else God was also helping me. This is how God's perfect circle of love works. It is also why we frequently come to know God two by two. If you do not want to be afraid, develop the faith that God will take the fear from you and He will.

I now want to focus briefly on other religions. There are many ways to find God in this world.¹⁰⁸ The prophets of other recognized religions (whether Christian or not) had the experiences they recorded in their writings. God is continuing to teach us the same principles and path regardless of the names humanity has given to particular religions. Often different cultures require different approaches. So God continually communicates in the manner that gives each of His children the best chance to hear Him. An example of God's continual work is how we humans treat alcohol. Jesus knew that alcohol was harmful and so only used it in sacred ceremonies. But Lucifer was able to bury this information as the Christian church became institutionalized. Therefore when Gabriel talked to Mohamed, Gabriel was very explicit that alcohol use hinders our ability to feel Heaven. This is why the Qur'an expressly forbids intoxicants. This is also an example of how more of God's wisdom will be known when we share God's love with each other.

Another one of Lucifer's tricks is getting us to limit our horizons. Archangel Raphael recently explained that, "*Lucifer used empiricism to limit God.*" Science only operates within a very limited range. If something cannot be touched or examined,

then science cannot be the means to understand it. Our culture has been tricked into accepting science as our sole source of knowledge. According to Archangel Raphael, *“We have allowed Lucifer to substitute science for God in our culture.”* While there is nothing wrong with science, we have to recognize its limitations and never substitute science for faith. As Raphael has said, *“Science just ‘discovers’ what God has already made and is no more nor less than a tool to measure a moment in time.”*

Archangel Raphael further explained our infatuation with science (despite its limitations) by using cancer as an example. He said we try to prove to ourselves that we understand something by giving it a label. When all cell mutation is called cancer, we believe we understand this process even though we know cell mutation has multiple causes. By using one name, though, to explain this phenomena, we can pretend we understand this cellular activity and that we are in control. Raphael said all science requires this approach. First, we label something and then we break it down into smaller and smaller parts until it looks as if we understand what we are doing even though we do not. Raphael said that in order for us to really understand anything, we need three things. *“First, you need a frame to understand the experience; second, you need the experience because, without the frame, the experience by itself is meaningless; and third, you need to decide what to do with the experience.”* Raphael then used these principles to explore our culture’s relationship with the Holy Spirit.¹⁰⁹ He said, *“Everyone has had an experience with the Holy Spirit if that person felt something when he or she prayed but the person just did not know what to do with the feeling. Angels and the Holy Spirit are as much a part of this world as people are. Your culture has just not had a frame to understand what the people were feeling and, of late, your culture has tried to deny any experience someone had that was outside the culture’s frame of understanding.”* This has been Lucifer’s trick to eliminate the wonder that leads us to God.

Look at what Jesus said before he ascended as recorded at John 20:19[b]-22:

Jesus came and stood between them and said to them, "Peace be with you!" He said this and he showed them his hands and his chest and the disciples were overjoyed to see The Lord. Then he said to them again, "Peace be with you! Just as my Father sent me, I also send you." And as he said this, he blew at them and told them, "Receive the Holy Spirit!"

We will never understand the Holy Spirit or know how God does what He does but we can have the experience. This is why Jesus left us with two measures to discern among spirits. First, Jesus said that if the spirits deny The Christ (which is the love of God in the manner embodied by Jesus¹¹⁰), then they are not of God. The second measure Jesus left is the fruits of the Spirit as described at Galatians 5:22-23: "love, joy, peace, compassion, fulfillment, grace, faith, gentleness, hope." Archangel Michael has told me, "If you experience one or more of these fruits from the spirit, then you know you are in the presence of an Angel of the Lord." Only God can create these feeling in us. This is why Lucifer has tried to get our culture to reject feelings as a measure of the truth. Lucifer can trick our intellect but he can never duplicate any of the fruits of the spirit because they only come from God.

God's rules are simple. When you deny the rules laid down by The Christ and fail to follow His path, you have difficulty returning home to your Father in Heaven. If you believe in these rules and follow the path of The Christ, you find God. The Buddha met Angels and never heard of Jesus, yet he found God. Mohammed met Angels and found God even though he thought Jesus was only a great prophet who would return at the end times. There are many religions that will lead you to God when you follow the path of "The Christ." This is what Jesus came to teach us as well as show us. This is also why Archangel Michael told

me, “*Jesus did not come to start a religion.*” This means you do not have to be a “Christian” as we define one in the West to find your Father. When you express selfless love for another, you will have a real experience with the Holy Spirit regardless of your religion. Both the Buddha and Mohammed prayed for others and therefore met the criteria for Heaven to come. When God’s rules are followed, the Angels always come. As Archangel Michael has said, “*If you follow the rules laid down by The Christ, then you are following the path of The Christ and the Angels will always come and have always come.*”

Archangel Raphael has also taught me that, “*The measure of your responsibility is the purity of your approach.*” If you are a “pure” vessel for God, then all of the responsibility for the outcome rests with God. If you are not pure in your approach, then the responsibility for the outcome rests with you. This short rule encapsulates the current problems the institutional churches are experiencing. When a church is requesting money in order to dispense God’s love, God is not part of that exchange because the vessel is not pure. We intuitively know that you cannot purchase God’s love but we still continually make money part of our religious life. This is the work of Lucifer because he knows how money limits and hurts our access to God. This is why he had to trick our religious culture into believing that money is required to spread God’s love. The problems we see in our churches are the unintended consequences of violating this rule.

On the subject of money, Archangel Raphael has told me the Angels have a very difficult time understanding why we value “*pieces of paper with numbers on them and why we want so many of those pieces of paper for ourselves.*” He said, “*Faith in God is the only measure of a person’s wealth. Not pieces of paper with numbers on them.*” In the current economic times, these are words all of us need to reflect upon. We need to understand that Lucifer controls our economic system with the twin goals of bringing fear and separation. Anything controlled by fear and greed cannot be of God. The problem is that in our

current culture, we all need money to survive. Therefore the issue becomes your intent and focus. I pray that you will focus on your relationship with God and learn how to use money in the manner that will serve God. Prior to the Angels coming into my life, I was an expert on how not to use money properly because Lucifer had tricked me long ago. I am now learning to embrace God's approach.

8

THE HOLY SPIRIT

The Holy Spirit is here as promised by the Son for the world. His coming gave Us new ways to manifest the love of the Father in this world. He and the Holy Spirit were gifts from God for those of Us in Heaven seeking to serve His will. God gave Us the means to communicate clearly His will so that We could guide His children towards Him. We are here, We love, and seek to love more. We can enter all His children and they Us with Faith and love. There can be no fear in this, for it is Heaven and His grace. That is “joining the Holy Spirit” and with it, rejoining with God.

Archangel Michael

If you love me, observe my commandments. And I will request it of my Father and another Advocate He will send you, who will be with you forever [to the end of the universe]. The Spirit of Truth [Holy Spirit] whom the world [universe or people] could not receive because they could not see or know Him. But you know Him, for He lives among you and through you is manifested. I will not leave you orphaned. For I will return [be coming] to you soon [in a little more]. And the world will not see me, but you will. That I live, also you shall live. In that day you will understand [know] that I am in my Father and you, you are in me and I in you. Whoever have my commandments in them and observe them, they are the ones who love me. The ones that are merciful thus, shall receive

mercy from my Father, and I shall shed my grace upon [be merciful to] them and show myself to them.

John 14:15-21

Have you ever wondered who or what the Holy Spirit is? The Holy Spirit (or “Spirit of Truth,” as translated from the Aramaic Bible¹¹¹) is the Advocate Jesus left for us when He departed His human body. I have always been confused about the Holy Spirit and so I prayed for an answer. Archangel Raphael came and told me the Holy Spirit is a collection of Angels God uses at that moment to hear and answer prayers. When you pray, an Angel appointed by God hears your prayer and immediately takes it to God. God then directs those in your circle of love¹¹² to transmit the knowledge they receive back to the Angel who first heard your prayer. God may also use other Angels who are outside your circle of love but who are constantly praying to help God in any manner needed. This means the collection of Angels in the Holy Spirit is constantly changing as directed by God. The Angel who first heard your prayer then brings your answer back. In this process, those who love you, as well as those who are favored by God to assist Him, all grow closer to God. This means that the Holy Spirit is always personal to you. But it is more wonderful than this because your initial prayer elevated all of those involved in the process of answering your prayer. Those who participated are now capable of helping someone whom they could not have helped before you initiated your prayer. This is God’s perfect circle of love where everyone is elevated in the process of helping another.

As each Angel grows closer to God, that Angel’s capacity to serve God increases. This means your prayer has not only helped you but the size and power of Heaven increased through God answering your prayer. With each move toward God, all involved have more of God’s power coming through them and thus grow stronger. This cycle of growth surrounding each prayer replicates many times every instant. God is limitless. We

are incapable of understanding the subtlety and magnificence that each of our prayers initiates while in this manifestation. Just know that when you pray selflessly for another, you join with God and the Holy Spirit for a moment. This is why you are able to feel the presence of God when you pray. Interestingly, the Holy Spirit is different for each person. In fact, the Holy Spirit is different each time you pray, even if it is the same prayer. This is God's magnificent plan where His love coupled with our love replicates eternally with all ultimately moving closer to God. This process is perfect because God created it.

One time I was talking to Archangel Michael and in answering his question, I said I would "just pray." Archangel Michael immediately suggested that I, "*never say 'just' in the same sentence with prayer.*" His response shows how important and how powerful your prayer life is. When you deploy prayer, you have set in motion a potent "weapon" that initiates a perfect circle of love. Your prayers help both those in this world and those in Heaven grow closer to God. This explanation demonstrates that everything starts and stops with God just as Jesus taught 2,000 years ago.

God loves everyone here unconditionally even though each person is at a different level of development. The majesty of God is that each of us will always have a personal relationship with Him. This is why your experiences will necessarily be different from mine and why no two situations or answers to prayer will ever be the same. In searching for a metaphor to describe this relationship, it occurred to me that it is similar to how we see snow. We want to lump everything together under one name because we are always looking for an easy pattern or template. God, however, sees each of us as a snowflake because every snowflake is different. This is the mystery of His love.

As Archangel Raphael has told me, the belief that Heaven and Earth are separate places is one of Lucifer's tricks. We have been taught that, after Adam and Eve fell, our world became irretrievably lost. But Lucifer has very limited power and cannot

change the physical nature of this world. This is why Lucifer has to trick us into believing that God is not real or does not love us in order to generate the fear that then “creates” a place within us for him (and his helpers) to reside.¹¹³ When we embrace this lie, Lucifer has tricked us into thinking that we are mortal rather than immortal because this separates us from God. This explains why we can bring (and experience) Heaven anytime we refuse to accept Lucifer’s lies. When you allow yourself to feel the presence of the Holy Spirit, you have rejoined with Heaven and become immortal again even though you are inside a mortal body.

When I first began speaking with Angels, I was told this world was an illusion. At first, that concept was difficult for me to understand because everything feels so real when you are in a body. But this just demonstrates the genius of God and His creation. We intuitively know that nothing here is permanent and that we will all die at some point. We also know that everything we create or build here will ultimately crumble. So what is the point? As I have said elsewhere, the point is that we come to learn how to love because this knowledge stays with us forever. Love is God’s essence and when we find and adopt that essence in this *war zone*, we have done something permanent. If we listen to Lucifer, who is constantly telling us how small and insignificant we are, then we will never reach our potential in this world. I now realize that the limitations we have placed on ourselves are of our own construction and have not been created by God. Richard Bach in *Illusions: The Adventures of a Reluctant Messiah* said, “Argue for your limitations, and sure enough, they’re yours.”¹¹⁴ This is what many of us have been tricked into doing to our own detriment. Lucifer is constantly trying to deceive us into using our freewill to keep from basking in the light of God’s everlasting love. Once everyone understands that he or she is a child of God and is loved completely, then there is no limit to what can be accomplished for God. The reason is because it is actually God doing the work once the conditions are created to

permit God to use that person's body. This is the battle that is this world and each moment you get to choose which side you will approach.

Jesus clearly understood that there were no limits to God. Remember when Jesus fed more than 5,000 people with nothing but a few pieces of food.¹¹⁵ Jesus was able to do this because He did not allow Himself to be bound by the limitations Lucifer put in front of Him. This is also why Jesus could walk on water.¹¹⁶ But remember what Jesus always said when a miracle occurred in someone's life while in Jesus' presence, "*[I]t is your faith that has healed you.*" In giving this answer, Jesus understood that each person had to give God permission for the miracle. Only then could the love of God and the indwelling of the Holy Spirit move matter to suit God's purpose. This also why Jesus could not heal everyone. In effect, each person healed him - or herself when the person refused to allow the construct created by Lucifer - the illusion - to stand. At that moment, Heaven came for the person who was healed because that person's faith eliminated the illusion of separation between Heaven and Earth that Lucifer worked so hard to create.

If you are sick and medical science tells you nothing can be done, please do not accept that lie. At a prayer meeting recently, Raphael told a very sick person that doctors are statisticians. He said that doctors understand math and what they frequently tell their patients maintains the statistics. When Raphael said this, he asked the sick person whether God or the doctors had created her. She obviously answered by saying God created her. Raphael then inquired whether she thought God could re-create her? No one is ever beyond the reach of God and His healing love.

Nothing has changed in more than 2,000 years since Jesus healed all of those in His presence who wanted healing except Lucifer's continuous work to convince us that this world is not part of Heaven. The only reason Lucifer's efforts have changed anything is because the majority of us have believed him. Lucifer has convinced many in this world that neither he (Lucifer) nor

God exists. But miracles will come anytime we create the faith. Heaven always comes when there is faith, no fear, and selfless love for another, but the opposite is true too. If you have no faith and do not believe, then you get exactly what you expect to get. This does not mean that God loves you any less, it just means you have limited what God will do at that moment through you. There is no compulsion in God because compulsion and control are not based in love.

This world presents us with the constant challenge of either moving closer to or further from God. When you have fear and have been tricked into losing part of your faith, you move away from Heaven. This is why Lucifer has no power other than what he can trick you into giving him through the traps he sets. He can either confuse you for a moment or surprise you but he can never force you to do anything. This is why the battle is at the freewill level and why love in all of its manifestations is the only weapon that defeats the dark and its efforts. It is the quantity of love that gives your soul its spiritual size. This means Lucifer is very small and getting smaller. Each day that he continues to reject God and His love, he continues to shrink in size and strength. However, if you believe him and follow him, he can and will hurt you.¹¹⁷ Hell is a place of Lucifer's invention, not God's. Remember, those who are in hell are there because they voluntarily followed Lucifer even though they were tricked. In fact, Lucifer must continually trick even those who serve him into thinking that God would never take them back. This is why self-judgment is so damaging. It is also why those souls who have been tormented by Lucifer sprint toward God's light when they finally realize how much God has always loved them. At that instant, they are no longer under any illusions regarding Lucifer and his intent or power and they finally understand that it was only their self-judgment that was keeping them from Heaven.

Why would God allow hell to exist even though He did not create it? As I have explained before, God will not violate

our freewill. As such, He will never make us do anything even though He is the source of all power. Even though some are lost for a time, God has an eternity to work with each soul because time is not relevant in Heaven. Your time here is a momentary gift from God and an opportunity to learn about love in an environment that does not exist in Heaven. God still loves us even when we reject Him because He has already forgiven us for our transgressions. This is why God continually provides us with evidence of His great love. This is also why God sent His Son who voluntarily chose to walk to the Cross to atone for our sins. Jesus' actions provided us with the perfect example of what God's love in a body looks like.

Let us return to the ramifications of Archangel Raphael's statement that this planet would be fully part of Heaven if all humans immediately left. This means hell exists inside us when we give Lucifer a place to sit. In our fallen state, we have been tricked into misusing our governance over this world and all things in it. Thankfully, though, none of this is permanent. In fact, God is in the process of changing this world back to what He always intended to be. He will, however, wait on us to finish the job because God gave us that right and power. This is why nothing will happen until enough of us pray for this world to fully return to Heaven. This is also why when this world "flips," those who are then incompatible with Heaven will have to leave. The idea that those who are the so called "chosen" will leave at the rapture is not correct.

Lucifer is doing everything within his limited power to delay his day of reckoning with God. He has completely lost touch with love and tricked himself into believing that God will treat him in the same way he (Lucifer) has treated us. Lucifer is a prisoner in a prison cell of his own creation. But we do the same thing to ourselves when we accept the lies brought to us by the dark. These lies include any belief that God will not love us because we are unworthy. These are lies that many of us embrace and the result is self-separation from God. The truth is that God

has never left us and never will. We have just been tricked into accepting these lies with the result that we cannot hear God or feel His presence in our state of self-judgment. This is why self-regard is so important. Self-regard is the opposite of selfishness and synonymous with self-worth. When you know you are a child of God and loved completely by Him, there is nothing to fear. This is why looking at your life is so important because it is the only way to expose to the light what the dark has done to you. When you finally understand what really happened in your life (and not what you have been tricked into believing), then *“the truth will set you free”*¹¹⁸ just as Jesus said it would.

I want to close this chapter by explaining how much God is a part of each of us. Most of us believe there is a God out “there” and this is true. But part of God is also within each of us. This is why He always knows what we have done and thought because God is that part of us that is life. God knows your pain and feels it along side you. When you have created a hell for yourself, God is with you even though you cannot feel His presence. The concept of eternal separation from God is just a lie Lucifer invented because he is afraid of being alone. What should not surprise you is that Lucifer is loved completely by God. He cannot feel that love but that does not change the nature of God’s love for him.

My prayer is that each of you will look at your life and begin to allow yourself to feel. When you make this conscious effort, you will have cracked open the door of the prison cell you created for yourself to survive the dark’s assaults.¹¹⁹ This process allows Heaven to take your pain so you can begin to heal from what the dark has done to you. The Angels call this “going there” and it is the only way you can free yourself. It is a difficult process because there are no shortcuts to God. But everyone who comes to this world must go through this process before returning to Heaven. Along this path, you will learn to forgive those who hurt both you and your loved ones. Once you have done this, you will be in a place where you can begin to

forgive yourself. This process of learning to forgive teaches you what love really looks like. God created our bodies to feel. This means our bodies can feel both God and the emotions brought by the other side. As you learn to reject the negative emotions brought to you by the dark, you learn to embrace God's love. This is why the process redeems you. Once you have learned to love, you are at a place where you can again fully feel God's presence.

One of Lucifer's cruelest tricks is to get some to embrace the concept of eternal separation from God. Lucifer has tricked many of the Biblical translators into using the word "eternal"¹²⁰ when translating what Jesus said would happen to those who believe they are far from God. In fact all are loved completely by God regardless of what they have done or thought. My prayer is that you will pray to return to the state of being that is Heaven and then be willing to go through the process of looking at your life. I can assure you that "*the truth will set you free*" because true love is never earned - it just is. Also, as you go there, you will begin to feel the Holy Spirit within you, which will allow you to again bask in the fruits of the Spirit. This is what God always wanted for you, but you have to realize it for yourself and then embrace it.

9

JESUS AND HIS PATH

There is but one God. He is love and compassion. He sent a son, Jesus, who descended from Heaven into the body of Mary through the grace of God and the means of the Holy Spirit. Through Him, came the grace of God and His love for His children. He loves us all.

The glory of God is His great love for us. The Christ is that love. Jesus embodied that love and was sent by God for this purpose, to be perfectly “the Christ.” The Christ was here both before and after Jesus. The Christ is here now. The Christ is perfect as God’s love is perfect.

My Brother [Lucifer] has worked hard for almost 2,000 years to govern this Earth of Man since the Son. God made Heaven here. My Brother [Lucifer] cannot abide in Heaven. To change it, he had to effectuate change in Men, away from God their Father. He had to turn them away from the Son who came to hold The Christ through making it about life after death and not eternal life beginning here. He had to create a system of measuring reality designed expressly to deny measurement of the Holy Spirit or those of us in its host. Yet, Faith in this world is growing.

My Brother [Lucifer] was sent to govern this Earth with myself, and others of the Holy Host. Since he

decided to leave God, his Father has allowed him the freewill to retain his knowledge of how we came here to govern and therefore how to disrupt it. He is a created being. He is not God, although the part of him that is life is part of God, however small now. He has used this knowledge to create systems to serve his mortality. They, unlike what God has created, are not real. They are failing as they must.

Anything not of God cannot stand but for a moment. The length of that moment is the natural revolution of the juxtaposition of what is false versus what is real. The end of this moment is accelerating. The experiences and words you have been given are needed. They are gifts for the world from Heaven.

Archangel Michael

Who was Jesus? He was who He said He was - the Son of God born through Mary. Volumes have been written about Him, but He wrote nothing. Archangel Michael has told me the reason He wrote nothing is because He did not come to *tell* us how to live. Rather, He came to *show* us how to live. He is our example, and this is why He referred to Himself as the Son of Man.¹²¹ We know very little about Jesus' life except what is recorded in the Bible and the two references to Him in Josephus's works.¹²² But we know all we need to know in order to pattern our lives after Him.

Let me digress from Jesus' life for a moment to explain why Jesus was born when He was. The answer involves Archangel Michael and what he has shared with me about his own life. Remember, Michael is the Angel God has placed in charge of this world.¹²³ Michael uses all of the knowledge he has gained during his life to help God in this world. In Heaven there is a concept of size that we do not understand. As souls grow closer to God, they grow larger. Michael is too large¹²⁴ to come here in

flesh himself. As a result, he assumed that no one his “size” or larger could come here either. Because God has placed Michael in charge of governing this world, the other Angels follow Michael’s lead in prayer. Two thousand years ago, Michael and the other Angels God has placed here looked down from Heaven and thought that Lucifer was winning the battle against God. It was then that Michael realized he had been praying in such a way as to limit God. Once Michael understood this, he (as well as those in Heaven who follow his lead) immediately changed the way they had been praying. As soon as Michael no longer limited God with his prayers, God immediately sent His Son, Jesus. This explains why Jesus could not be conceived in the natural way. Jesus was too “large” to come to this world in a body except that nothing is impossible with God. This also explains why Jesus’ presence has been disruptive to the way the world operated before He came.

God’s rules never change though. Jesus had to pray to come to this world just as we all do. Jesus loved so much that He prayed for God to allow Him to come so He could help all who were suffering because of Lucifer’s actions. Once Archangel Michael changed the way he was praying, God granted both Archangel Michael’s and Jesus’ prayers and Jesus came into a body. But this was only part of the story because Jesus’ presence did not immediately change the nature of this world. First, Jesus had to encounter the same challenges that everyone here does and then Jesus had to learn to exercise His freewill so He could discover who He was and what He could do. Finally, Jesus had to continually choose to align His freewill with God’s in order for God’s plan to unfold. It is only because Jesus exercised His freewill as He did that He became who He was and is. This is why Jesus was both human and divine. Archangel Michael has told me the reason some of Jesus’ actions appear inconsistent is because of this learning process. Sometimes Jesus spoke as a man, sometimes as the Holy Spirit (when Jesus allowed the Holy Spirit in), and sometimes as God once Jesus decided He

could hold God. When God completely filled Jesus, then it was God who was speaking using Jesus' body. Jesus was and is that large. But this is also why Michael told me, "*do not diminish the Father with the Son.*" All of Jesus' power came directly from God.

Archangel Michael has also told me that God's love - *The Christ* - has always been part of this world. At the Transfiguration, Jesus assumed the mantle of The Christ and God's love entered human form.¹²⁵ God asked Jesus "The Christ" to come so this world would have a living example to follow. This is why Jesus' path can be our path if (and when) we choose. Everything Jesus did we can do when we follow His example. But Jesus' path is straight and there are no exceptions or accommodations. As Archangel Michael has told me, "*You do not need to understand as a student why the Master does what He does. Otherwise, God would not have sent by example. In the process of implementing in the path of God, you find it. The learning never ends.*"

Heaven has always been part of this world because God and His love have always been here together with those Angels God asked to assist Him. But with the advent of Jesus, we now have a living example to copy. The reason the first followers of Jesus called themselves *The Way* is because they were mirroring the example Jesus had just left. Jesus showed the world that there is no judgment in love because His life demonstrated that judgment (just another form of fear) and love cannot co-exist. Either one or the other always prevails and this is the battle. In light of what I have just said, please read the following from 1 John 4:7- 13:

My beloved, love one another, for love is from God, and whoever loves, is born from God and knows God. Because God is love, and whoever loves not, knows not God. By this is demonstrated the love of God for us, that God sent His only Son to the world so that we may live in His hand. This is how love was born, it was not that we loved God, except it was God who

loved us and sent us His Son redeemer on behalf of our sins. My beloved, if God loves us like this, we too ought to love one another. God no human being has ever seen. But if we love one another, God shall strengthen Himself in us and His love shall be fulfilled through us. And by this we know that we have been strengthened by Him and He is strengthened in us, that of His Spirit He gives us.

Archangel Michael has told me that Jesus did not come to start a religion. Rather, Jesus came to show us how to find Heaven in this world, which is a state of being. Jesus also showed us that we can attain this state of being by following His path. The path for Jesus is described in the Bible¹²⁶ but other sacred books describe the path other prophets have followed in their separate quests to find God. Do any of us really believe that God is a Catholic or an Anglican or a Methodist or a Buddhist or a Hindu or a Muslim? Humanity has created these religions to try to understand our place in this world, and, in part, to give us the illusion of controlling God. But God is not subject to our limitations. This is not to say that organized religion does not have its place, it is just one of many avenues to find God.

The institutional Christian church began creating problems for itself when it decided to begin paying ministers to dispense God's love. In making this decision, the church violated one of Jesus' rules and has suffered major unintended consequences ever since. God can work within the institutional church just as He can work anywhere, but the idea that one church, religion, or building has a monopoly on God is simply false. When we are taught this, though, we unwittingly limit what God will do through us because we have imposed limitations on God. In a church, the issue is always how those in charge of the institution will exercise their freewill to lead that organization because an organization is no different than we are. Each decision the

institution embraces either moves that institution closer to or further from God.

Another trick Lucifer has deployed to separate Christians from God is the concept that the Jews were responsible for Jesus' death. This trick has started wars and spread hate and dissension between Jews and Christians. Archangel Michael has told me that "the crowd"¹²⁷ killed Jesus because He brought to light the pain the people around Him felt. Some in the crowd were so afraid of seeing and feeling what they believed they had done that was against God, they had to remove the One who brought their pain to light. Interestingly, the people who killed Jesus were the very people Jesus had come to help. This perfectly demonstrates how much we will hold on to the coping mechanisms we have adopted to live with the pain Lucifer brings. Change is not easy but it is the only way out of those traps Lucifer continually sets for us.

People are in hell and purgatory only because they have refused to look at their lives. God has designed this world so that you cannot return to Heaven until you have looked at your life. The reason for this rule is that looking is the only way you can heal from what the dark has done to you while you were here. It is also the only way you can learn from your mistakes. One of Jesus' parables that theologians have wrestled with for centuries is recorded at Matthew 10:34-40 and reads as follows:

Do not expect that I have come to spread peace over the Earth. I did not come to spread peace, except destruction. For I came to turn the man against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against the mother-in-law. And the enemies of the man will be the children in his house. Whoever values father and mother more than me, is no use to me, and whoever values son and daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. And whoever does not bear his cross and follow me, is not worthy of me.

Whoever seeks himself, loses himself, and whoever loses himself because of me, finds himself. Whoever receives you, receives me. And whoever receives me, receives the One who sent me.”

Jesus said this because He knew Lucifer would bring fear to those who did not want to look. But this parable is not complete. I will now provide you with the parable’s ending courtesy of Archangel Michael.

If you love your family, someone has to be brave enough to look and, from looking, to transfigure to what is of God. This implies a battle, for those family members who have not yet done so will fight because Lucifer has made them afraid. But in the end, the battle is not against those who protest but for those who protest. This is the missing part and this is why there is no judgment once you have gone through the Transfiguration. It is not about you anymore. You have crossed the great divide Lucifer has brought here. Your job is to lay bridges across the divide so those who fight you can find God themselves. This is freewill. Until the return of The Christ, the Angels, and all who have crossed are tasked with guiding across the great divide those who wish to follow. Because the battle is at the freewill level, no physical method of battle can ever work. You give up your life to gain it.

As fully presented, this parable explains why some of your greatest detractors will be those in your own family. Lucifer knows that those you love the most have the greatest influence on you. Therefore, Lucifer will bring fear to them and attack them in every way possible in an attempt to get them to stop your efforts to serve God. Once Lucifer succeeds in generating fear in some of your family members, they will try to diminish or extinguish your light because they are afraid. Paradoxically, if

you yield to those in your family who are afraid, then both your loved ones and you will be hurt because Lucifer will have won. This is just another example of why Archangel Raphael told me, *“Trying to find God in this world is the most dangerous job you can have.”* The only responses to any fear brought your way that will work are faith and love. As Archangel Michael has said, *“Faith is the answer to the great mystery.”* While you will not know when your love will overcome their fear, have faith that it will ultimately triumph because love is of God.

Jesus once told a parable about building a house on ground without a foundation.¹²⁸ This is the place where many people live their lives because they have put their faith in something that is not of God. They intuitively know it, but are afraid to look for fear of the pain it will expose. The pain is already there, but these people believe they can suppress it. During Jesus’ ministry, His light exposed the people’s pain so they could be healed. Yet often the crowd was filled with too much fear and had too little faith. I can tell you first hand that looking at your life is very painful. But once you have done it, you realize that you were only protecting an illusion. The process then allows you to free yourself from the prison you had created for what you thought was your own protection. You had forgotten that your sins were already known to God and were forgiven long ago. Also, most times the things you were most fearful of seeing were rarely your fault anyway. This is why you quit defending Lucifer once you have looked.

I want to cover one more time what I mean when I say *“defending Lucifer.”* Most of the time when we sin, Lucifer was the one who tricked us into doing what we did. Our bodies may have done the action, but the action was done while we were either under the influence of drugs or alcohol or we were doing something that we had been taught to do by a person who was under Lucifer’s influence. The problem is that our remembrance of the act does not include either Lucifer or his influence being there. This is why we end up defending Lucifer when we blame

ourselves for having done the action we are ashamed of. This fear (and the embracing of Lucifer's lie) then opens a space within us that Lucifer fills. The Angels call this self-judgment *defending Lucifer's space* and now you can understand why self-judgment is such an impediment to feeling God's presence. Self-judgment is just another form of fear that blocks your ability to feel God and prevents God from working through you to help both yourself and others.

This fear of looking at both your life and past actions is Lucifer's last stand. Lucifer knows that once you see the truth, he will no longer have any control over you. This is why it is so important to go there and look regardless of the initial pain it will cause. Look at what Jesus said as recorded at John 8:31-3:

And Jesus said to those Jews who believed in him, "If you are loyal to my manifestation, you are truly my disciples. You shall know the Truth and the Truth shall set you free." They said to him, "We are the offspring of Abraham, and we never perform work for any human being. How can you say that we shall be free?" Jesus told them, "Amen, amen, I am telling you, that whoever commits sin is the slave of sin. And the slave is forever unable to hold on to his home, but the Son establishes you till eternity. For thus the Son shall make you free, that truly you shall be the Sons of the Free."

Through these words, Jesus has set before us His life and His path. Once you follow it and look at the truth, "*the Truth will set you free*"¹²⁹ because you will cease being Lucifer's slave.

One of the first times I talked with Archangel Michael, he asked me whether I wanted to be a spiritual man or a religious man. I intuitively said a spiritual man, but I really did not understand the difference at the time. However, this difference is something each of us needs to understand. In a book entitled *Pagan Christianity?: Exploring the Roots of our Church Practices*¹³⁰ by Frank Viola and George Barna, the authors explore this difference by chronicling how we in the Christian

faith worship today versus first century Christians. I want to discuss two points the authors raise.

One of the rules Jesus brought to his apostles was not to accept compensation for helping people get closer to Heaven.¹³¹ Yet, today most ministers or priests are either compensated by the church or supported by the church. This means that paid pastors are by definition more “religious” than “spiritual” because their livelihood is dependent upon pleasing those in their churches or denominations. Unfortunately, unintended consequences have accompanied the decision by institutions to pay their clergy. The authors list some of the consequences suffered by those who have chosen to be pastors.¹³² This list demonstrates precisely why Jesus told us that what has been freely received from God is to be freely given. As Archangel Michael has told me, each paid pastor must decide “*whether to give up the church of man to join the Church of God. The decision is whether to serve God and through God serve man as opposed to serving man in relation to God. Who is in charge?*” This is the difference between being a religious person versus being a spiritual person. As indicated by the statistics cited in the previous footnote, man is a very tough taskmaster.

The damage does not stop at the clergy level though. If the pastor is paid, then the laity by definition becomes more passive. Through the introduction of money, those in the pews wrongly believe they can pay someone else to do Heaven’s work. The unintended result is that all parties are hurt by this exchange. The challenge in this world is for each person to reach his or her full potential by serving God and this quest cannot be accomplished through paying another to do the work that will elevate the worker. No one is more qualified than another to be God’s servant because everyone has a piece of God within. The challenge each of us face is to release that part of God that is within. This is why the quest cannot be delegated to another regardless of whether the other has been paid by you or not. God loves us too much to allow this to happen. This is also why

your relationship with God is so personal. You are truly unique in God's eyes and God's love will come to you in the form that is perfect for you when you pray for it to happen.

Collectively, humanity has created religion just as we have created our societal laws. If our religions and laws are analyzed together, it becomes obvious why so many problems have accompanied "man made" religion. The United State Code contains our federal laws and is currently printed in 35 volumes that comprise over 45,000 pages. Each statute has regulations that were written to interpret it and these are found in the Code of Federal Regulations, which is currently over 175,000 pages long. Each state has its own statutes and regulations that mirror the federal statutes and regulations in size and complexity. Unsurprisingly, these federal and state laws and statutes are in a constant state of flux. What was legal at one time can quickly become illegal and vice-versa. As society changes, so do its laws, and religions mirror these same changes.

There are over 38 Christian sects and each sect has written rules and regulations that constantly change. The current battles raging within many of the mainstream Christian denominations are examples of this change. But the current internecine warfare is not of recent origin. If you look at the history of Christianity, each "heresy" was a battle that was ultimately won by the side with more power. The losing side would then typically leave to create another sect that over time had the same problems and the divisions continued anew. On a larger scale, there are over 22 religions in the world and each of these religions has the same issues I have just described within Christianity. Human nature does not change just because people do not speak English or live in the West. Everyone is subject to the same temptations and is capable of making the same mistakes. This is why it is important to remember that individuals rather than God have created the religions we see. As I said earlier, we have devised these religions to limit, control, or manage our perception of God. This explains why a new "religion" is created when there

is something a particular culture or sect does not like. As I said earlier, do any of us really believe God is a Catholic or an Anglican or a Methodist or a Buddhist or a Hindu or a Muslim? God is God and His rules never change. The rules of God that are in effect now are the same rules that were in effect 2,000 years ago or 6,000 years ago. They are constant because they were designed to help us understand that we are “of God.” God’s rules are also designed to bring us home. This is why God sent Jesus to embody and live according to God’s rules. This is also why we have to embrace the path of The Christ¹³³ if we want to move closer to God.

Throughout this book I talk about the concept of “The Christ,” which is separate and distinct from Jesus even though He became The Christ at the Transfiguration. The Christ is the presence of God’s love in this world and has always been here. The Christ is what we experience when we pray and ask to feel God and His grace. This is why one does not have to be a Christian to know The Christ. At John 14:6, it is recorded that Jesus said, *“I am the way and the truth and the Life. No one comes to my Father except through me.”* When Jesus said this, he was speaking as The Christ and meant that you find God in love because that is God’s nature. Jesus did not mean that you either had to be a member of a Christian sect or believe that He was the Son of God to find God. Therefore, everyone who exercises selfless love has joined with God regardless of his or her religious affiliation. This is why when a Muslim, Hindu, or Buddhist exercises selfless love, he or she has found God too. This principle also answers the question of how those souls found God before Jesus walked this earth. When someone found The Christ through exercising selfless love, he or she found God. Jesus the man embodied The Christ and His walking to the Cross was (and remains) the supreme example of this selfless love.

Any belief that requires a person to convert to a specific religion in order to find God is an example of how we have been tricked into judging our brothers and sisters. God, through

His Angels and the Holy Spirit, will reach us anytime we pray because God will occupy as much space as we give Him. If the space we offer is small, He will fill it. If it is larger, He will fill that too. This is how God respects our freewill. If you are afraid of a particular manifestation of the Spirit, then He will not give you that manifestation. Another unchanging concept is that God always loves us regardless of our choices. God created our soul and the life we experience always includes God because He is always with us.

I want to examine the current state of the mainline Christian churches in America. Many are being torn apart as one faction in the church judges another faction's belief on homosexuality. In this battle, each side believes it is the supreme authority on God's Word and can, therefore, judge the other side. In believing this, each side has usurped God's role in judgment. As I have explained earlier, only God can judge. Jesus could not have been clearer when He addressed this issue as recorded in Matthew 7:1-5:

Do not judge, so as not to be judged. For by the judgment that you judge, you shall be judged, and by the measure that you measure, you shall be measured. Why do you see the straw in your brother's eye, and the beam that is before your eye you do not notice? Otherwise, how can you tell your brother, "Let me take the straw out of your eye," and behold, the beam in [front of] your eye? Hypocrites, first, clear the beam from your eyes, and then it will be clear for you to take out the straw from your brother's eye.

Yet, judgment is what we see. God is definitely present in the magnificent buildings of the denominations where this battle is raging, but each side's freewill limits what God will do. The hypocrisy becomes apparent when the focus of the battle immediately shifts to money or property once a particular church

votes to leave that denomination. Where is God's love when a denomination sues its congregation over property or vice-versa? Unfortunately, these cases are growing by the day. This is why Jesus instructed us to forgive our enemies. I do not know whether each side considers the other "the enemy," but that does not change Jesus' instructions to us as recorded in Matthew 5:38-48:

You have heard it said, "An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth." But I am telling you, do not rise up against evil, except whoever strikes you on the right side, turn to him the other. And whoever wishes to put you on trial, and take your shirt from you, leave him your cape too. Whoever forces you to go a mile, go with him two. Whoever asks you [for something,] give it to him; and whoever wishes to benefit from you, do not stop him.

You heard it said, "Love your best friend and hate your enemy." But I am telling you, like your enemy and bless those who curse you and do good to those who hate you and pray for those who exploit you and leave you bare; So that you become the sons of your heavenly Father, He who makes his sun shine on the good and the wicked, and brings down the rain on the righteous and the abominable. For if you like those who like you, what are you to be compensated for? Do not even the revenue collectors do this? And if you greet your brothers only, what good is that? Do not the revenue collectors do this also? Be therefore mature people, like your Father in heaven is Mature.

This passage is very clear but rarely followed. Yet it is the only way we can solve our current problems.¹³⁴ Love and forgiveness

are the only things that can trump hate and resentment regardless of whether such love is deserved. If anyone had a right to hold hate in His heart, it was Jesus. Yet while He was nailed to the Cross, He said, “*Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.*”¹³⁵

In the book *90 Minutes in Heaven*¹³⁶ by Don Piper and Cecil Murphey, a Baptist minister recounts the time he spent in Heaven after an automobile accident. Because this man came to God through the frame given to him by the Baptist Church, he had a certain vision of what Heaven would be like and so it was. This is the perfect example of God having a unique relationship with everyone. This is why Heaven will be different for each person because each person’s expectation of Heaven is personal. It will be the same with the presence of God and the Holy Host in your life because that is the nature of God and your relationship with Him. Given the nature of freewill, there can never be a template because God gives each of us the ability to believe and act as we choose. Trying to create a template is why problems develop in the institutional church. Each sect attempts to establish rules that the sect then mandates others to follow.

Another problem prominently on display in the institutional church is money and its role in the church. Those who give money to the church exert power and control and those who receive that money respond to that power and control. This is precisely the reason Jesus instructed His apostles not to take compensation for dispensing God’s love.¹³⁷ While God always permits us to violate His rules, the results will always be different than they would be if we followed His rules. This is why the institutional church is in its current state.¹³⁸ As institutions, many churches have become more concerned with the things of this world than with spreading God’s love.¹³⁹ The size of their buildings, the publicity they receive, and the size of their congregations have taken precedence over bringing the grace of God to the people.¹⁴⁰ God works completely and fully when the vessel is pure. Again, look at Jesus. He gave everything He had to ensure

that God had a pure vessel to work through because, if the vessel is not pure, God is working through a sieve. God obviously could force Himself through because He is God. But if He did, then we would not learn what He is teaching us. This is why it is so important to reform the institutional church from within. The church can do great things for God when the people who lead the church understand and follow the rules Jesus laid down for us to follow. The challenge is to analyze why the institutional church looks the way it does and change it. Love will always triumph in Heaven's time.

This concept of a pure vessel is one I have trouble with because I think in black and white terms. However, someone can be pure one instant and not the next. In the instant a person is pure, the Heavenly Host is there and working because God only needs an instant. But if the vessel is not pure in the next instant, the Heavenly Host will leave. Freewill is moment-to-moment and instant-to-instant. This concept is what made Jesus' life so remarkable. When we see what He did, we have to marvel at His ability to remain close to God regardless of the circumstances Lucifer put in front of Him. Jesus has shown us that we only need faith, no fear, and selfless love to remain pure vessels. We do not have to understand why. We just have to decide to follow the example Jesus left for us. But as Archangel Michael constantly reminds me, "*The path is straight.*"

Next, I want to address the issue of the unpardonable sin. Archangel Michael explained to me that the unpardonable sin is when someone hurts another in the name of God. This is what the term "blasphemy against the Spirit" (as set forth at Matthew 12:31) means. Unfortunately, this sin is easy to stumble into because it is born of self-righteousness and judgment. The Pharisees judged Jesus as a threat to their status and power and therefore fought against Him.¹⁴¹ They justified their actions by claiming Jesus was guilty of blasphemy. From our perspective today, their reasons are clear. Unfortunately, self-righteousness and judgment are still present in many of our institutional

churches. One prime example of this is again the issue of homosexuality.¹⁴² Those on each side of this battle believe their side is operating in the name of God.¹⁴³ As such, each side believes it is serving God by waging this war. At the point of division, the battle then turns its focus to money in the guise of the church building that was paid for by the congregation that has voted to leave the denomination.¹⁴⁴ Obviously, God's love is not present in any of this fighting. Yet this battle is being waged between people who have been praying together (and for one another) for years. The sad aspect of this war is that Lucifer has tricked both sides into committing the unpardonable sin because there is no evidence of love, forgiveness, or compassion from either side toward the other. It is telling that the church's property becomes the foundation of the expression of the conflict. There is a reason Jesus said, "*Give then what belongs to Caesar to Caesar and what belongs to God to God.*"¹⁴⁵ When you try to make God into Caesar, His power and majesty are not present because you cannot purchase either God or His power and love.

If we take a step back and look at these church battles from Lucifer's perspective, Lucifer appears to be winning at every stage. Lucifer has been able to trick each side into believing that its side is following God's directive when, in fact, each side is judging the other and hurting others in God's name. In such an environment, everyone involved is losing but the effects of this battle are not limited to the church combatants. Any non-member who is hurting and in real need of God's love will look at this scene and see the hypocrisy present. Lucifer can then trick this person into believing that this controversy is representative of God and therefore no help can be found for him or her within the church.

Examining these church battles shows that Lucifer has tricked many of our churches (and denominations) just as he trapped the Pharisees and Sadducees when Jesus was here. Nowhere in the legal instructions contained in footnote number 144 are love and forgiveness mentioned. Of course, to include such things was

not the job of the attorneys who drafted that document. Those attorneys were doing the job they were hired to do, which was to protect the property of the church. But the very fact that a church has a legal department is symptomatic of how much property has become intermingled with God's Word. As Archangel Raphael once told me, "*I do not remember where Jesus said, 'gather together your favorite things and follow me.'*" Jesus' message was that the things of this world are a distraction from what is truly important. Any battle over property in a church is proof of Jesus' admonition to the rich. Since many of us in North America and Europe are monetarily wealthy as compared to those in the third world, our wealth or our desire for more wealth is one of the biggest impediments that we must overcome.

Earlier I mentioned that the crowd was responsible for the crucifixion of Jesus and I want to return to this concept. Jesus' crucifixion had nothing to do with the Jewish race. Any anti-Semitism premised on Jesus' crucifixion is just another iteration of the unpardonable sin. Those in the crowd killed Jesus because they were afraid of His light. When Jesus forgave them from the Cross, He showed us how we are to respond if we are to be consistent with Heaven. We must constantly be on guard and fight the emotions Lucifer tries to bring us when we become scared. Judgment is only fear brought by the dark and this is why judgment (but not as we understand it) is left solely to God.

I want to discuss another confusing point regarding the concept of the unpardonable sin. The very definition implies that once this sin has been committed the sinner is forever damned because the sin is by definition "unpardonable." Thankfully, this is not true. Archangel Michael explained to me that the reason Jesus said this particular sin was unpardonable is because this sin is the only one that was unpardonable by Him as delegated by the Father. However, no sin is unpardonable by God.¹⁴⁶ When Archangel Michael was explaining the unpardonable sin to me, he said that Jesus died for all of Lucifer's sins except the unpardonable sin.¹⁴⁷ This means that Lucifer must appear before

God to address what he has done to others in God's name. It does not mean Lucifer will be damned by God because Lucifer has already done that to himself. It means that God Himself will bring love to Lucifer in a way none of us in this world can understand. This is the mystery of God. Lucifer is a child of God, just as we are, and the life that is in him is of God. No matter how far Lucifer runs, he cannot escape God's love. However, he can continually use his freewill to reject God and His love and it is the same with each of us. There is no act we can do that will permanently separate us from God unless we continue to choose that separation.

I am learning to follow Jesus' path, but earlier in my life my attempts were sporadic. One principle I learned was that the fire would come every time I left the path. I believe this is true for everyone. While each person's journey is different, the lessons are the same. You will never experience true love, joy, or peace without God in your life, and you will never be fulfilled when you stray from His path. The things in this world may momentarily distract you, but they cannot satisfy you for long because you are always incomplete and lost without God being a part of your life. Occasionally, my past attachment to things will reappear. If that happens when I am speaking with Archangel Raphael, he will talk to me about a horse he used to ride that long ago passed from flesh. Archangel Raphael still loves and remembers this horse fondly. Well, we all have a "horse" and that is fine because each person's horse is part of his or her journey. No one is perfect and, thankfully, God never demands perfection. A story that conveys this point (as well as the humor that is part of Heaven) involves a Native American warrior who was on this Earth more than a century ago. During his lifetime, he was a Cheyenne Dog Soldier named Standing-Two-Feathers. Although the Dog Soldiers were regarded as some of the best warriors in Native America, the Cheyenne people tried hard never to take another's life. In the Cheyenne culture when two people fought, the warrior who remained on his horse

after the battle was considered the victor and earned the right to take the coat worn by the loser as a symbol of the victory. This type of action is called “counting coup.” In one particular battle, Standing-Two-Feathers knocked a United States soldier from his horse. Rather than kill him, Standing-Two-Feathers took his coat. According to Archangel Raphael, this Native American warrior (who is now an Angel in Heaven) still “wears” the coat he won more than a century ago while battling to protect the women and children of his tribe. In this warrior’s mind, he won the coat fairly and does not want to give it up. Guess what? He does not have to. After Archangel Raphael told me the story he said, “*We are still working with him on the coat.*”

This story demonstrates that there is no template in Heaven. We are all individuals and God does not require conformity inside the path for His children to return to Heaven. Conformity is only desired (and sometimes required) within religions we have created. Archangel Raphael has told me, “*Institutions are neutral. Their success for God depends upon each institution’s leadership at the time.*” He has also told me, “*Religions are very important because we need something to judge our behavior against.*” This is why your belonging to a church, synagogue, mosque, or other organized gathering is important. If you do not believe in something, then you have nothing to judge your behavior against. However, there are two important points to remember with institutions or religions. While you can conform your beliefs to your institution, please do not judge others who believe differently. Once God’s true love becomes the overriding component of each religion, there will be no judgment. Remember what Archangel Michael has told me, “*If you truly love, forgiveness and compassion are as easy as breathing in this manifestation.*” This is why I keep suggesting that you take back to your house of worship the love and wisdom from God that has been shared with me and that I have explained throughout this book. Institutions will only change when their members ask for such change.

Archangel Michael once told me, “*Faith is the answer to the Great Mystery.*” I want to close this chapter by exploring two situations that demonstrate how much faith and freewill were a part of Jesus’ life. First, I want you consider whether Jesus’ death on the Cross was required by God for us to receive God’s grace? I think you know by now that God’s love is unconditional, which means the answer is no. So if Jesus’ death was unnecessary, then why did He choose to come here and suffer as He did? The answer is Jesus came to this world to demonstrate to us what God’s love in a body would look like. This means there was no theological need for Jesus to come but some souls had been so hurt they needed to see how much God really loved them in spite of what they thought about themselves. Therefore, Jesus came to reach all souls by demonstrating God’s unconditional love and this world has been different ever since. However, Jesus had to overcome the same challenges we do in order to become who He was as the next example shows.

The second example involves the night before Jesus was crucified. As you recall, Jesus asked three apostles to stay awake and pray with Him in the Garden of Gethsemane.¹⁴⁸ The Bible recounts that three separate times that night the apostles fell asleep while Jesus was praying. We have been taught that these apostles did not help Jesus in His greatest hour of need because they fell asleep but that is not true. Heaven actually put these apostles to sleep for a very specific reason. Jesus had taken three apostles with Him because it takes four people to “hold the space” for one to hear Heaven clearly. Jesus was praying for God to tell Him whether He had to walk to the Cross. Heaven deliberately put these apostles to sleep three times so that they could not keep the space to Heaven open specifically so Jesus would not get a direct answer to His prayer. This meant that Jesus heard nothing and so the answer to His prayer was silence. In the face of this silence, Jesus chose to go to the Cross. That is faith and that is how much God respects our freewill. God would never tell Jesus what He had to do because Jesus had to decide

that for Himself. This means sometimes you will not get direct answers to your prayers that you can understand. Jesus remained a vessel for God even when he heard nothing from Heaven. This is because He had complete faith, no fear, and selfless love for us in this world. As long as you align your freewill with God's, the result will always be "*glorious beyond contemplation*" even if sometimes you do not hear an answer from God.

10

LUCIFER'S TRICKS

Now you understand what we, the Angel's of the Lord see. Your "see" is now beginning to be as our own. It is a "knowing" through love. A gift from God. The measure of your pain is no longer your own. Yet the pain of others is as real a pain as your own could ever be. From this place do we serve. From this place do we pick up those who fall from Him. From this place do we carry His love. From this place do we serve His will. From this place do we grow ever closer to God. The "fire" that burns away what is not of God is the great journey He has granted all His children, and we walk with them, each step. What awaits them are God's gifts glorious beyond contemplation. Yet for each, steps are taken towards and away from that Glory in their individual journey. Many are lost for a time. The answer to such "lost," is love, only love as God loves.

Archangel Michael

The book of Revelation has many metaphors for the battle at the end of time. What is generally forgotten, though, is that this battle is the same battle that has raged since Lucifer fell. As I said earlier, the Angels refer to this world as a "war zone" and all of us here as "warriors for God." Therefore, the concept of continual warfare is the perfect metaphor for life in this world because we are constantly in battle with those not

close to God. What is not obvious is that each of us chose to come here to fight against such forces in order to free those souls whom the dark would oppress, and, ultimately, through prayer and love, to free the oppressors themselves. God wants all of His children to return home to Him.

The concept of the end times creates fear in many people and this too is one of Lucifer's tricks. At Genesis 1:27-31,¹⁴⁹ God tells us that He has given us authority over this world. This means the shift that is coming will not occur until enough of us pray for it to happen because we are not passive participants. God has given us both the power and the responsibility for making sure it occurs. I would not have been given the knowledge from God that is in this book if the time for the shift were not upon us, but when this world actually becomes fully part of Heaven is up to us.

Lucifer does not want us to recognize his existence. In fact, some believe his biggest trick may be convincing our culture that he does not exist.¹⁵⁰ The reason he wants to hide is because no one willingly chooses to get hurt by following the dark.¹⁵¹ Lucifer's tricks have worked because he is very intelligent and God has permitted him to retain the knowledge he had before he fell. As such, he knows how this world works and can use that knowledge to exploit our weaknesses, but he still has to trick us to get us to follow him. Lucifer's goal is not to be alone and so he is constantly trying to convince others that God would never love them for what they have done.¹⁵² Most people have been convinced they are unworthy when in fact everyone is a child of God. This world is an opportunity to overcome challenges that do not exist in Heaven. When we prayed to come here, God knew exactly what each of us would learn because He knew what we would be taught. As Archangel Michael has explained to me, "*You cannot learn what you have not been taught.*" The logical extension of this concept is that we will teach those we love what we have been taught ourselves. Even though we can agree these concepts are true, we often blame ourselves for the

mistakes we have made because of what we were taught. When we judge ourselves as unworthy, we have accepted Lucifer's lie. The mistakes we could not avoid are the very things we came here to overcome. This means these very mistakes have to be answers to our prayers. This is why you cannot leave this world without talking to Archangel Michael about your life. While your sins have already been forgiven, you must look at your actions (no matter how painful that may be) because it is only through this process of looking that you are released from the self-judgment Lucifer has brought to you.

The Holy Spirit has told me that *"our soul begins to die the moment we take responsibility for something that was not our fault."* Lucifer's process is to first trick us into blaming ourselves for things that are not our fault. This then gives him the ability to trick us into judging ourselves unworthy of God's love. This second mistake is where all of the damage occurs because we have assumed a role left only to God. Once we understand Lucifer's tricks, any perceived power (or control) Lucifer has over us vanishes. This is why it is critical to look at your life and expose the lies by allowing God's light to shine. Until you take the opportunity to look, Lucifer will continually hurt you because he will always hide the truth from you. You cannot heal until you stand in the light of God's love and truth.

Have you ever wondered why God has allowed Lucifer to continue to trick us in this world? The answer is two fold. First, God respects Lucifer's freewill (just as He does our own) and so God will never command Lucifer to love. Second, no matter how far from God Lucifer's tricks take those who are lost, ultimately only good comes when the lost return to Heaven. It may not appear to be a positive thing when you are in the middle of suffering, but you grow closer to God when you learn to overcome Lucifer's tricks. This is why you prayed to come here in the first place. As I asked earlier, what better place to learn how to love than a world where you will see the face of evil? When you can forgive even the most horrendous injustices,

you have just begun to love as God loves.

Perfect love, communication, and understanding exist in Heaven. While you can still be confused and use your freewill to fall when in Heaven (as Lucifer demonstrated), most souls do not do this. But this world is different. Most of us live in a world that is Lucifer's domain. War, greed, lust, lying, violence, fear, intolerance, drug and alcohol abuse, rape, prostitution, child molestation, brain washing, torture, division, and judgment are all rooms in Lucifer's house. You came here to learn how to respond to these provocations. Heaven is always here for the asking even though Lucifer has tricked many of us into accepting the idea of mortality. As children of God, we are immortal beings. But, Lucifer knows that, if he can get us to believe we are mortal, then he has separated us from God because of the fear that is inherent in this limiting concept of mortality.

Whether you are here in flesh or not (those "trapped" in purgatory or hell), you always have a choice between mortality and immortality because prayer, love, faith, compassion, and selflessness resonate across God's entire Kingdom. When you embrace those things that are of God, you have brought yourself back to your true state of immortality. Heaven is a state of being and not a place. When you choose to be "of this world" and focus your intent and energy on the things that are a part of Lucifer's realm, you have voluntarily made yourself mortal and have chosen to live with Lucifer. The consequence of this choice is that you have limited the Holy Spirit's ability to intervene. As Michael has explained to me, *"This is a war. One side plays by no rules, and the other side plays by very specific rules handed down by God."*

The fire we experience when we are operating in Lucifer's realm is a gift from God that tells us we should not be there. It does not take long to realize there is no comfort far from God.¹⁵³ Fortunately, it is this same fire that ultimately helps us to again embrace God and immortality. It is interesting to note that the Angels refer to disease¹⁵⁴ as a gift. While neither disease nor

the fire seems like a gift when we are enduring either one, the presence of either is what ultimately causes us to examine those parts of our life that we heretofore had been able to ignore or suppress.¹⁵⁵ Lucifer's world is composed of fear, impotence, separation, loneliness, and isolation. This is why no one chooses the dark without being tricked. Without the presence of the fire, it would be difficult to realize how lost we have become. This is why Lucifer uses alcohol and drugs to try to distract us from feeling the fire. Thankfully, we intuitively know when we do not feel right even if we cannot identify what is wrong. Ultimately we learn that, "*There is no security in this world apart from God,*" just as Raphael has told me.

First, I would like to shine a spotlight on some of Lucifer's tricks as they relate to women. Many women have sexual experiences they are not proud of. Sadly, many of these women blame themselves even when what happened was not their fault. The damage this does to a woman's mind, body, and soul is often compounded by society's judgment and condemnation. Both a woman's self-judgment and the societal judgment are wrong but what is obvious from the perspective of Heaven is rarely obvious from the perspective of this world. As the Holy Spirit has taught me, "*Every woman is born understanding that she has a covenant with God.*" As such, she wants to keep herself in a state of purity because God may use her body to bring another soul into this world. Angel Mary Magdalene told me, "*Purity is a state of being for a woman whereby she only gives herself to another freely in love and in a manner that honors God's gifts to her as a vessel for the life He can bestow.*" This covenant remains whether or not a woman chooses to carry life for God. Knowing this, Lucifer does everything he can to trick a woman into believing that she has broken her covenant with God and is no longer a sacred vessel. Lucifer uses a number of tricks that are designed to remove a woman's freewill in order to achieve his goal. Some of his favorites include incest, rape, violence, drugs (including alcohol and some types of prescription medication),

lying, peer pressure, hypnosis, and brainwashing. When Lucifer has used any of these (or any combination of these) against a woman to get access to her body, God and Heaven understand that she did not give her consent and remains pure. From Heaven's perspective, unless a girl or woman has freewill, she remains pure and untouched regardless of what is done to her body or mind by those Lucifer works through.

There is a reason Lucifer has tricked our current culture into accepting and encouraging promiscuity and alcohol use. Let us follow a prototypical teenage girl through adolescence and marriage whom I will call Sarah. Sarah has grown up watching television and reading magazines that extol overt sexuality. In her middle teens, she begins dating a boy whom she thinks she loves but explains to him that she is not comfortable with having sex outside of marriage. Even though Sarah's boyfriend knows her belief system, he too is subject to the same peer pressure. Sarah has grown up watching her parent's drink and one day her boyfriend talks her into drinking with him. She accepts the alcohol not knowing that her boyfriend's intent is to reduce her freewill to gain access to her body. When Sarah is under the influence of alcohol, her boyfriend has sex with her. From Heaven's perspective, Sarah never consented to sex and remains pure but Sarah does not see it this way. Most women who have had similar experiences blame themselves for having broken their covenant with God. Heaven views what happened to Sarah as rape since her body was taken without her consent. The fact that neither our society nor our criminal justice system agree¹⁵⁶ further compounds the damage suffered by many women.

After this encounter, Sarah does not understand what to do. She is afraid to tell her parents and she wants to legitimize what happened. Therefore Sarah continues to give in to her boyfriend's requests for more sex. She convinces herself that what happened will be made right in the eyes of God because she and her boyfriend will ultimately marry. In doing this, she can still hold onto her dream of only being sexually intimate with one man.

Now let us assume that Sarah becomes pregnant¹⁵⁷ and goes to her parents and confesses to her actions and her condition. Let us also assume that Sarah's parents are more concerned about their reputation in the community than the welfare of their daughter. In order for her parents to escape judgment from their friends, they force Sarah to have an abortion. The damage done to Sarah is compounded when her parents instruct Sarah never to talk to anyone about this abortion. Unwittingly, Sarah's parents have created a trauma victim modern medicine cannot heal. According to the Holy Spirit, when a girl or woman is subjected to sexual trauma and she is not permitted to talk about it, her maturity and growth remain at the state where they were when she was initially assaulted. Secondly, if Sarah does not look at what really happened to her (which means looking honestly at her parents' and her boyfriend's actions), then Sarah has owned the lie. This is when the "*soul starts to die*" according to Archangel Michael.

One consequence of rape that is rarely identified or understood is promiscuity. Rape is such a horrendous violation on so many levels, no woman ever wants to be raped again. Once a woman is raped, Lucifer's next trick is to convince her she can never be raped if she controls her future sexual encounters. This trick results in a woman embracing promiscuous sexual activity as a means of survival. She offers her body before the man can take it and believes she is in control and cannot be hurt. Alternatively, she teaches herself to obey the man's request for sexual services even when she is opposed to it. These tricks are obvious when exposed but those who are just trying to cope rarely identify the tricks for what they are. This is why Jesus told us never to judge another in this world.¹⁵⁸

Once Sarah has embraced the lie brought to her by Lucifer, she learns that consuming alcohol helps her live with herself and the pain. Thanks to Lucifer, she lives in a world where shame is always present.¹⁵⁹ Unfortunately, this scenario highlights how many women are forced to live in our society. While I have

explained Lucifer's tricks, I want to examine them again because it is so important for us to understand how they are constantly used against us. First and foremost, Heaven knows that Sarah's first sexual encounter was rape even though Sarah did not understand it as such. Sarah did not believe she was raped for two reasons. First, she was taught that rape only occurs when the woman does not know her attacker and is violently beaten and violated. Second, she remembered consenting to drink alcohol and thus believed what happened was her fault. Her mind incorrectly linked her decision to drink to her "decision" to have sex even though this is wrong. From Heaven's perspective, despite what was done to her body (the assault) and her mind (impairing her judgment with alcohol), she is still pure. But, because Sarah does not believe this, her soul has been bruised because she accepted Lucifer's lies.

Sarah took each subsequent action with her boyfriend for reasons not based in sinful intent. Unfortunately after the rape, Sarah thought there were only two ways to view the event. Either Sarah gave her body of her own freewill because she loved her boyfriend, or she was sexually indiscriminate. Neither was correct but Sarah chose love. Once she made this choice, she was committed to a rapist.¹⁶⁰ When Sarah discovered she was pregnant, she told her parents. Although she planned to marry the baby's father, her parents forced her to abort her child.¹⁶¹ Sarah's parents made the decision to take the life that God had sent to their daughter and then shamed their daughter into believing her pregnancy was her sin to carry. They ensured that their daughter could never heal by demanding that she keep it a secret. As Archangel Michael has told me, "*If you cannot speak it, you cannot heal from it.*"

Once Sarah's situation is analyzed, it is obvious many sins were present, but Sarah did not commit any of them. When Sarah's parents became afraid that their daughter's pregnancy would affect their reputation in the community, they created the space necessary for Lucifer to work through them. This is

why they could ignore their daughter's freewill and embrace the killing of their grandchild. Sarah's subsequent sexual behavior was a result of what was done to her by Lucifer, her first boyfriend, and her parents. Sarah discovered that alcohol¹⁶² seemed to numb the pain enough for her to function. The sexual choices she made came not from a place of desire, but from a need to protect herself from future rapes. Lucifer's tricks had created the perfect trauma victim and the alcohol in Sarah's system kept her from ever looking at what really happened. When she honored her parent's instructions to talk to no one about what happened, Sarah was cut off from an impartial outsider's insight and remained stuck in the trap that Lucifer had set.

Lucifer's tricks only had the power to hurt Sarah because they remained hidden. Sadly, the demand made by Sarah's parents that Sarah not talk about her abortion only further aggravated the damage. Had Sarah gone to counseling, read books on "date rape," or received a supportive and loving response from her parents, her life may have taken an obvious sharp turn back onto the path to God. This is why it is so important to talk to someone about what you have gone through. If the person you chose to communicate with does not respond in a way that is close to God, pray about it and ask God to help you find another who can help you to heal. God will always provide someone who loves you, either in Heaven or here on Earth, who will bring God's unconditional love to you in a manner that you can feel and that is safe.

Next I want to explore briefly how Lucifer tricks men. Where Lucifer gets many women with sex, he frequently gets men with greed or their quest for power. Men have been taught they have to take care of their families. From that point of love, it is not far to trick them into thinking more is better. Look at how much time men spend away from those whom they love (their families) working to support them in a way the men have been taught is necessary. In truth, a man's family needs his time, attention, and love much more than the money he brings home.

Lucifer is a master at twisting our love for others into destructive avenues. This is why God is exposing Lucifer's tricks now.

Power is an obvious danger. A relatively recent quotation that expresses this danger is from John Acton, first Baron Acton (1834–1902), a historian and moralist. He is the one who said, "Power tends to corrupt, and absolute power corrupts absolutely. Great men are almost always bad men." Lucifer's trick is to get some men to believe they need power to force others to do the right thing. Unfortunately, this power usually consumes the person with the result that the person's life becomes about the self rather than helping others. Anytime self-aggrandizement is present, Lucifer has fertile ground in which to work. It is important for us to remember that God never controls us because that is precisely His gift of freewill. This means that if God chooses not to control His children, then we have no business trying to control others. Any thoughts we have that lead us towards controlling others have been brought by the dark.

Another dangerous but effective trick that ensnares men is the sexual double standard. Our culture praises men who have multiple sexual partners but then judges women for doing the same. This hurts both sexes. Men frequently see women as either higher or lower than they are when neither is correct. Both sexes are equal and when we begin to treat each other that way, many of the inherent problems between the sexes will vanish. God created both sexes so that we can learn from each other rather than worshipping or judging the other.

Finally, let us briefly examine our governmental and financial systems because these are two areas where Lucifer has tricked us. We know the current financial systems are suffering a crisis of confidence. I prayed to God for some understanding in these areas because many of the people I know and love have been, or are being, hit hard by financial concerns. Archangel Michael explained our current situation in the following manner:

My Brother [Lucifer] has used his knowledge to

create systems to serve his mortality. They, unlike what God has created, are not real. They are failing as they must. Anything not of God cannot stand but for a moment. The length of that moment is the natural revolution of the juxtaposition of what is false versus what is real. The end of this moment is accelerating.

Before I begin, I need to tell you that I used to be a devoted conservative who could best be described as a libertarian capitalist. I always assumed capitalism provided the best chance of a good life for most members of society, especially since I was living comfortably. I came from a white middle class family and was financially successful after practicing law for over thirty years. I believed that I understood human nature and how it worked within a capitalistic system. What I have been taught by the Holy Spirit has caused me to reassess all of my prior erroneous assumptions.

Look at the quote above from Archangel Michael again. He points out that our capitalistic system is not of God and therefore will fail. Let us analyze this by first defining what is of God. The Angels have taught me that selfless love for others is what is of God, which is why it is the path to Heaven. Capitalism is a system based on self-interest. What we rarely stop to analyze is that there are two mutually inconsistent premises at work within capitalism. The foundation of the system is that all parties to a transaction must trust each other party, but in the negotiations all parties are simultaneously trying to maximize their advantage over everyone else. When so stated, it is obvious these two premises are mutually inconsistent. In truth, because no one really trusted the other parties to a deal, safeguards had to be developed that guaranteed the result of the transaction even if the other parties did not honor their commitments. This is why insurance companies were created. Now, governments have had to guarantee the insurance companies in order to keep the

system going. In the past, we saw the creation of government-sponsored enterprises (“GSE”) such as the Federal National Mortgage Association (“Fannie Mae”). It is not surprising that Fannie Mae was created in 1938 during the Depression. This means our system has been failing for a long time, we have just not wanted to look closely at this slow collapse. If we do examine what is occurring, we see that the financial world has moved from trusting individuals, to trusting institutions, to now trusting governments. As Archangel Raphael has told me, *“You believe paper has value and this works for a short time until people decide it does not. You have constructed an illusion that is based on false confidence with the information you have.”*

Our culture’s problem is that we have been taught that the only alternative to capitalism is statism.¹⁶³ But statism will also fail because it is not based on the principles given to us by God. We forget that each nation-state only acts in its own self-interest and that our trust in nation-states is premised on mutual fear of economic collapse or material loss.¹⁶⁴ If fear is the basis for mutual cooperation, then that cooperation will last only as long as it is in each nation-state’s best interest. This means there will be shifting alliances premised upon what is best for each nation-state and what each nation-state’s leaders desire for their own country. Once we analyze where we are, it becomes obvious that such a system can have no longevity. This is the reason the Angels I talk to refer to our country as Rome! The solution is for us to choose a form of governance that does not violate God’s rules. Mahatma Gandhi once said, “[The] Earth provides enough to satisfy every man’s need, but not every man’s greed.” When our governance is based on principles designed around the self and supported by fear, the system will necessarily fail.

Nothing that is based on fear and greed is of God and it does not matter whether we are talking about capitalism, communism, fascism, socialism, or dictatorships. These are all human-made systems that were designed to allocate resources provided

to everyone by God. In each of these systems, there is still a leader of a state negotiating with another leader. Dictators are just as afraid of losing their power as any democratically elected politician is of losing his or her power. We have to realize that nothing based on fear is sustainable. In creating these various governmental systems, humanity has yielded to Lucifer's tricks. Lucifer wants currencies to collapse or fine homes to lose their value because these things create fear. As we now know, everything that Lucifer does is based in fear. As Archangel Michael has told me, *"The whole world is in a contagion and has been for a long time. People have built systems that are different from what God created. When you build governmental systems based on premises that are of Lucifer, they will only last for a short time."*

Lucifer's goal is to create separation and fear and he has done this by getting us to create different countries and governments. If he can get us to fear people who look or believe differently from what we do, then hell is strengthened. God created the diversity we see so all can learn from each other. Our created nationalities, citizenships, regions, races, tribes, and religions are only illusions. Only God makes a real "tribe." Each person with different blood can decide how he or she will act towards those who are purportedly different. In Lucifer's realm, the formation of countries affects how we treat others and how we allocate resources. For example, the amount of the United States' annual military budget (just under \$700 billion in 2011) could easily feed the hungry of the world, but we spend this on our defense and protection because Lucifer has tricked us into being afraid. I would ask you to contemplate who wins with this type of thinking?

Countries were created because each country's leaders wanted forced uniformity behind one ideology. Under God, we are all His children and our differences are there to help everyone. Lucifer exploits differences to divide. God creates differences so we unite in selfless love to help one another. The

only solution to the world's current problems is to unite with God. As Archangel Raphael has told me, "*There is no security in this world but God.*" Lucifer continually attacks us and we respond to his attack rather than finding solace in God. We all need to embrace God by understanding what Archangel Raphael meant when he told me, "*Faith is not what God will do. It is what He has already done.*" When we return to the principles taught to us by The Christ, then there is no place for fear in our lives. As we face these challenging times, we need to understand nothing has changed that is "real" or of God because God is a constant. In fact, He is the only constant. All of our problems have come because our relationship with God was shifted when we embraced or were influenced by Lucifer's tricks. Now is the time for us to exercise our freewill to find God again. He is real and He is here.

I will conclude this chapter with some practical advice on how to fight Lucifer's tricks. In the Bible, there are many references to Jesus and the apostles "casting out demons." This process is largely ignored by mainstream Christianity because we do not understand what it means. Jesus and the apostles did clear people of "demons," but what they were actually doing was praying for these lost children of God to go home to Heaven. We do not realize it, but we are constantly surrounded by souls who no longer have bodies. These souls can be from Heaven or working for the other side whether they are in purgatory or hell. These souls communicate with us in ways that we do not understand but those from the dark are always trying to negatively influence our behavior. They do this by continuously planting thoughts in our minds that we embrace when we are afraid. This concept explains the anti-social behaviors we see. Notwithstanding this fact, the "devil made me do it" is not an excuse because everyone has the capacity and ability to reject this temptation. These lost children attach themselves to us when our thoughts are compatible with theirs. For example, if we allow ourselves to feel anger, then those on the other side who live in a constant

state of anger come inside us. The good news is that we can send these people home to Heaven. Here is a prayer I have used frequently to help lost souls go home. Any similar prayer will work.

Lord, please send Archangel Michael to hold the space around me. Lord, please send loved ones to help anyone who is with me return home to Heaven. You who are lost, I know you can hear me. I also know you are suffering. There is no need for you to suffer any longer. God loves you and God's love is unconditional. You have been tricked and misled. You are loved completely, and you are forgiven. Jesus died on the Cross for your sins regardless of your religion. Your Father in Heaven loves you and forgives you and wants you to come home. The light you see is for you. Go into the light. Go home to your Father. It is perfectly safe for you to go. Michael will help so please go to the light now.

The purpose of this world is spiritual advancement. We all makes mistakes in this world, and people get hurt. But, despite our mistakes, we eventually learn and evolve closer to God. God finds us, like a lost child in the wilderness, and then, when we learn from our mistakes, we are able to help others who are making similar mistakes. The time has come for you to learn and to evolve closer to God. The light you see is for you.

When your prayer is similar to this, you may feel tingling energy around you or you may feel the release of pressure around your temples. This is a sign from God that a tormented soul has chosen to go home, which means Lucifer's army just lost one

member as a result of your prayer. This ability to help anyone go home is a wonderful gift from the Holy Spirit and you can start using anytime you believe you can.

11

LUCIFER'S FALSE REALITIES

Faith my son, only Faith. In Faith lies the answer to the Great Mystery. In Faith lies the path to the Father and the fulfillment of the Son. In Faith are you joined with us, the Holy Spirit. In Faith lies true love.

Love, my son, only Love, for in it is the true Faith.

Archangel Michael

Archangel Michael has told me the world Lucifer created is a false reality. This means that when our culture embraces Lucifer's world, Lucifer dictates the results. This is why we see so much pain here. This is also why we came to fight for what is of God in this *war zone*. We knew before we came that, if we could find love in this world, then we could help many souls get closer to God. My prayer is that we collectively seize this opportunity.

Most of us have had a challenging and difficult time while here. This is why we have to keep reminding ourselves that, "*this world is an illusion and a mere moment in time,*" as we struggle to overcome the hurt the dark continually brings our way. This same concept is recorded in 1 John 5:2-4: "*And by this we know that we love the children of God, since we love God and we observe His commandment. For this is the love of God, that His commandments be upheld and that this commandment does not*

become a burden. Because whoever is born of God, becomes victorious over the world. And this is the ultimate victory that faith wins over the world." (Emphasis mine.) Our challenge is to find immortality while we are in a mortal body.

I would ask you to please reflect on the following concepts for a moment. Even though our souls are immortal, all here have asked God to place their souls inside a mortal body that exists in a world that is partially separate from Heaven. Lucifer cannot abide in Heaven and so he has constantly enticed us to accept thoughts and ideas that are of Lucifer's world so Lucifer has a place to sit. When we do this and join Lucifer, we find mortality. Once we have been tricked, our constant challenge is to find a way to return home to what we are – children of God who are loved completely. We can only meet this challenge by exercising our faith to choose to again be "*born of God.*" In fact, this is what each of us came here to accomplish. Thanks to Lucifer's influence, our culture continues to create noise that prevents us from hearing God until we are in crisis. As part of this diversion, Lucifer has also taught us to embrace God substitutes. In this chapter I want to explore these God substitutes because each one creates its own false reality. Lucifer is very smart, and so he knows that his tricks will only work if we do not see them for what they are. This explains why he can only work in the dark. Lucifer's masterful deception therefore must include enticing us in such ways that we do not realize he has tricked us. This is why Lucifer has a multistep plan to trap us. First, Lucifer hurts us. Next, he gets us to believe that it was our fault so we end up defending his space. Then he provides God substitutes so we learn to cope with the pain and fear that he initially brought. This is Lucifer's perfect circle of pain for our lives in this world.

One extreme false reality is the self-induced state that accompanies cocaine or heroin use. Archangel Raphael has explained to me (and we already know), the first time either drug is consumed the user's body experiences an immediate rush of pleasure. What is not well known (except by those who treat

addicts) is that this initial pleasure soon fades and depression replaces it. When the user becomes depressed, Lucifer then appears and explains to the user that pleasure awaits him if he will only take the drug again. Once this thought is embraced, addiction follows. The person is trapped in hell where he is constantly trying to find the pleasure he initially felt before the pain of insatiable craving replaced it. The continuing negative physical effects always dwarf any momentary pleasure the user's body feels. Once addicted, the addict has found hell even though he is still in a body. This cycle of brief pleasure followed by pain and craving continuously repeats itself in a drug-induced reality. Once there, the addict will never find any peace or rest because he has placed himself where he cannot feel God's presence. This is why heroin and cocaine are perfect vehicles to accomplish Lucifer's goal of separating people from God. This is also why Archangel Raphael once told me, *"The very best you will ever get from Lucifer you get at the first meeting."*

Our bodies are complex biochemical organisms designed by God for us to experience Heaven while here. The problem is that our bodies will do what they are designed to do regardless of the stimulant and Lucifer knows this. Pleasure is caused in part by dopamine, serotonin, and endorphins, which are naturally occurring neurotransmitters. God has given our bodies this process to experience the pleasure that God planned for us. But drugs or certain activities can also stimulate these same neurotransmitters. This is why Lucifer tricks some of us into ingesting drugs that artificially trick our brains into releasing these neurotransmitters when they otherwise would not be released. Addiction has a physiological component and a spiritual component. Lucifer is very smart and knows how to trick us into embracing certain actions that seem pleasurable at first but then quickly become addictive. Our brain chemistry plays a part in any addiction whether it involves ingesting an external substance, watching pornography,¹⁶⁵ or gambling. While the effects of cocaine and heroin are obvious, we rarely

associate an addict's plight with his or her lack of a spiritual connection to God.

According to the Holy Spirit, alcohol is another God substitute. Alcohol may be more dangerous than either heroin or cocaine because it is socially acceptable. Also, since alcohol works more slowly, it is difficult to see the long-term harmful effects.¹⁶⁶ While it is easy for those not drinking to see that alcohol creates a false reality in the behavior of those who are drinking, we have culturally embraced this behavior as fun. Part of the problem (or disease if you are an alcoholic¹⁶⁷) is that those under the influence cannot see the fallacy of their position. Because the body is a biochemical organism, once the pleasure receptors in the brain are firing, the body tells itself that it wants to remain in this artificial place. However, alcohol's alternate reality is evident to those who are unimpaired independent observers.

Another aspect of drug use (including drinking alcohol) that confirms such use is not of God is that the act is specifically done to bring pleasure to the self. God's rules point to selflessness not selfishness. Therefore it should surprise no one that the addict does not care whom he or she hurts by using the addictive substance (or continuing the addictive behavior) because the addict is only concerned about bringing pleasure to him- or herself. This fact alone should prove to us that God never intended us to ingest these substances. I can personally speak to the use of alcohol.¹⁶⁸ Although I am now a reformed alcoholic,¹⁶⁹ I did drink continually before finding God. I also fought the Holy Spirit when they suggested to me that alcohol was not helping either my family or me. I remember thinking that if I quit drinking, I would miss an important pleasure in my life. I thought this even though I knew that my alcohol-induced feelings were always temporary. This is an example of just how strongly we want to keep our false realities even when we intellectually know how harmful they are. This is why Alcoholics Anonymous meetings begin with each person introducing him or herself as an alcoholic. Part of the disease is denial and everyone has to

be constantly reminded of the facts. This shows how adept we are at hiding from the truth and deceiving ourselves. Lucifer understands this and uses our natural inclinations against us.

I now know that I drank alcohol because I did not want to look at certain aspects of my life. In part, this was because I did not want to face what had been done to me. To avoid looking, I embraced alcohol's false reality. As I look at my actions now, I realize that I was tricked into creating my own prison cell.¹⁷⁰ I even fought Heaven to remain there. Now that I have looked at my life, though, Lucifer can no longer use any part of it against me. This is why it is critical for you to look at your own life. Jesus was not lying when he said "*the Truth will set you free.*"¹⁷¹ Once God's healing light shines, Lucifer loses any perceived power that you have given him because Lucifer can only work in the dark. Once you look, you have opened the door to the prison cell you created for yourself.

As you look back at your life, the Holy Spirit will then shine a light into the spaces Lucifer used to fill. As the Holy Spirit did this for me, I began to forgive those who had hurt me and then started to forgive myself. During this process, I realized that God had long ago forgiven my transgressions. We must always keep in mind that everyone prayed to God for the opportunity to come here. This means God placed us where He knew exactly what we would experience and feel while here. In some sense, this makes each of us a prodigal son or daughter. As Archangel Michael has told me, "*Only God is perfect.*" Therefore, it is impossible for any of us to do everything perfectly. In fact, it is this world's imperfection that brought us here as "*warriors for God to fight that which is far from Him*" in the first place. This is why we are never alone and why God always sends the Holy Spirit to minister to us when we reach to God for help. God, The Christ, and the Holy Spirit are the perfect "Trinity" and they are ever present to bring redemption to us regardless of the illusions we have allowed Lucifer to create in our lives.

Sex is another example of addictive behavior if used in

ways not intended by God. It should not surprise us that Lucifer always tries to take something God created as sacred and make it profane. This explains why there is never any lasting joy among parties engaged in adultery or promiscuity because each party's intent is only focused on the self.¹⁷² This explains why intent is the critical component in whether sex is "of God" or not. The act is the same, but your intent determines whether it will be sacred or just another opportunity for Lucifer to hurt you.

Another God substitute that may not be as obvious as drugs or alcohol is obsession with the illusion of material wealth. This was made clear when Archangel Raphael explained greed to me. He said, "*At the core of greed is the belief that God will not take care of you, so you must take care of yourself.*" Before I began speaking with Angels, I was an expert on greed.¹⁷³ The first time I met Archangel Raphael, he asked me if I wanted him to "*make me rich.*" This rhetorical question coming from an Angel of the Lord immediately brought the issue into focus for me. In that instant, I realized material wealth is not a measure of God's love.¹⁷⁴ Yet we believe that wealth brings security and is necessary for us to be successful and happy. As Archangel Raphael continued to talk with me about money and the emphasis this world places on it, he said, "*There is no security in this world but God.*" Then he related something that was illuminating to me. He said the Angels in Heaven look down at this world and have trouble understanding why so many people here spend their whole lives "*chasing a piece of paper with a number on it.*" When you look at money from the perspective of Heaven, it is obvious how our preoccupation with wealth has created a God substitute. The Angels have told me Lucifer invented money and this should explain why it creates so many problems.¹⁷⁵ This is precisely why Jesus said, "*Give then what belongs to Caesar to Caesar and what belongs to God to God.*"¹⁷⁶

When you are filled with God, you do not need to create a false reality by using a substitute for His love. God and Heaven

will provide everything you need but you do have to work for it. This is the conundrum. Each of us must choose how much focus on money is healthy as well as being necessary versus an obsession. God's love is real and inexhaustible. Once you experience Heaven, you can share this great gift with others. As Archangel Michael has said, "*Heaven is a 'state of being' not a 'state of mind.'*" When you incorporate God's love into a state of being, you are in Heaven and can spread that feeling to the rest of His children. But being in Heaven is moment-to-moment and you must continually keep your thoughts pure to remain there. Any thought, intent, or action that is far from God immediately takes you further from Him.

This concept of choosing to remain in Heaven is something to keep in mind when you study the actions of any prophet who contributed to a religion practiced today. These prophets had the initial experiences they claimed to have had with God, an Angel, or the Holy Spirit. For example, God did speak to Moses and Moses did bring the Ten Commandments to his people. But we know that Moses slaughtered those he saw worshipping the Golden Calf¹⁷⁷ when he came off the mountain. Think about this for a moment. Moses had just spent 40 days in the presence of God and knew that "Thou Shall not kill" was one of God's rules. But when he came down the mountain and saw his own brother, Aaron, and others violating one of God's rules, he had them killed because Moses said that he heard God telling him to do so. Archangel Raphael told me that Moses clearly heard that he should kill these people but it was not God who was speaking. As soon as Moses allowed himself to get angry, the Holy Spirit could no longer protect him because Moses' anger prevented the Holy Spirit from working. Moses clearly heard instructions to have those worshipping idols killed, but it was Lucifer speaking and not God, and Moses could not discern the difference in his anger. This is why you have to understand what state you are in when you think you are hearing from God. God obviously forgave Moses, as that is the nature of God and His love. Once

Moses' anger passed, he could then recreate the state of being necessary for God to use him as a vessel to help others. It will be the same for each of us. This tidbit of information from Heaven, though, explains the many passages in the Old Testament where someone said that God told him to kill another. It also explains why God sent Jesus to correct these misunderstandings.

I want to discuss one other aspect of Mose's life. Moses brought to us ten principles from God to help us live well in this world. Unfortunately, we know these principles as the Ten Commandments. The very word "Commandments" conveys God usurping our freewill, which we now know He does not do. The author Neale Donald Walsch in his book entitled *Conversations with God* has an interesting concept. Mr. Walsch believes that these are not "commandments," but rather are covenants or sign posts to tell us when we have found God. This means that if we insert before each of the Ten Commandments the statement "We will know that we have found God when we..." as opposed to "We will burn in hell for eternity if we don't do this," we can eliminate the fear that Lucifer brings when we do violate these principles. Lucifer's effort is always to take us further from God while God's love never divides or separates us from Him.

One final thought on how Lucifer's tricks us. God's love is a "state of being" that you cannot impose on another person. Each person has freewill and God never uses compulsion or fear to influence anyone. If He did, then freewill would be illusory. Contrast that with our world where many believe they must impose themselves or their beliefs on other people in order to help them. God is not present when this happens. God's love is always freely given and cannot be bought, sold, or imposed. Unlike our laws, God's rules do not have exceptions. If we think about it though, how could there ever be an exception to unconditional love? Sometimes we do not understand why God does what He does, but, as Archangel Michael has told me, "*You do not need to understand as a student why the Master does what He does. Otherwise God would not have sent Jesus as an*

example. In the process of implementing the path of God you find God. The learning never ends.”

The beauty and majesty of our eternal life with God is that we are never finished on our journey toward Him. The more God teaches us the more we know is possible. As such, we will never reach the infinite and yet the joy of each new discovery is never diminished. This describes the mystery of our life with God that will exist for eternity when we choose to release ourselves from the old frames of reference that have restricted our growth.

12

MY CONTINUING JOURNEY

My Son:

Do not despair at the coming of the Kingdom of Heaven. To focus on what is of this world is to despair. Focus not on what is broken but what is of Him. For even in the smallest moment of love lies the path of The Christ.

You cannot measure love, or its impact on another. Do not be deceived by looking for what you cannot see. Visible results do not require Faith to continue. Even their absence strengthens the Faith of those who do His will. Faith is the answer to the great mystery, not tangible results. The moment you love it is already at work in Heaven. By its nature it is of God. God has ordained that it be used for His purpose. There is nothing but celebration in the coming of the Kingdom of Heaven for every moment of love unites His will for all of His children.

There is nothing but joy and wonder at what God can do and has already done. He did not stop loving you even as you knowingly broke the covenants that he gave through the Son of Man. He loved you. He loves you still. He loves those you love and those who cannot feel your love. Do not be tricked into judgment

of those you love. You cannot see all that is. Only God knows their hearts and their prayers. He allows us in Heaven to participate in their resurrection. What a gift! It is now yours should you wish to seize it. Faith is knowing. God will resurrect all who love. You cannot measure who and how each person will achieve the Kingdom of Heaven. Only God. You, however, if you maintain the state of a pure vessel, have been granted the great gift of participation in this resurrection. The path is straight. Only you can walk it for yourself as they must. The gift is in the journey towards God for in it you truly find Him.

God has gifted you with His grace and with His love. He grants you the decision as to where and how you would stand. This is not our “going away” or God “abandoning you.” It is His greatest gift. Now you know, you can decide to be whatever kind of vessel for Him and His love you choose. Will you be “lake” or “chalice”? The decision is yours today and every day, for He knows what you can do, as do I and will not command you in it.

As you dwell on the pain of one, remember, every resurrection in which you are graced to participate is a child of God. How will you decide to measure one against another? Is it your gain that you are seeking in such work or the return of a soul to Him? My brother [Lucifer] is adept at twisting love for another when it becomes about the self and there are many ways this can happen. Be on your guard. It becomes a question of how you decide to love and how you decide to stand. This is your life, your prayer, and your path. In implementing in the path of The Christ, you will find Him as will others.

You prayed for “sight” and to be a vessel for His love. God granted your prayer. It is not but joy to be the vessel for Him. Those who are ready to see can now use your example of faith and love to see God is here and real for them. Those that are not are “displaced” from where they were to a place where they may hear us and God in the future. Time is not what it seems here. No love is lost. No moment of pure outreaching for another is anything but a pillar of Heaven.

It is in the “walk” that you exercise the gifts for others. You will decide how, how far, and where that will be, if at all. My Son that did not want to be seen and was ashamed can decide if God’s light is enough. It is not for another to decide. When you are a pure vessel you do not “walk” any more, for you are with God and part of the love of The Christ. This is the experience you called “going to Heaven” with me. It is not a place, but a state of being. Faith and joy in exercising in the Path of God for which you prayed are its beacons.

How can you feel joy when others suffer? Know. Know my Son that God’s love overcomes all. Your love aligned with Him has already overcome.

Go to the Holy Land with God.

We will come.

Archangel Michael

Archangel Michael communicated this message to me on June 8, 2009. This day was so challenging that I was angry with Archangel Michael for trying to bring me out of depression. The woman I loved was suffering and I wanted her healed immediately. The idea that I had to follow

God's process and wait for her to exercise her own freewill was terrifying to me. What I have learned in this process is that we are defined by our responses on such days. While faith in the abstract is always important, it is only through exercising our faith in God when we are most afraid that we can bring Heaven to the people we love. Raphael recently said to me, "Faith without a test is nothing." This means that if you have prayed to strengthen your faith, tests will come in answer to your prayer.

I consider myself to be an expert on running and hiding. My normal response to any type of personal confrontation was to disengage. I would generally schedule a trip to a location close to a mountain, beach, or ski resort where I would distract myself until the threat of confrontation passed. On this day in June 2009, my impulse was the same; but, rather than disengaging, I followed the suggestion given to me by the Holy Spirit and stood for my family. Instead of getting angry and doing what this world would advise me to do to protect myself, I opened my heart and turned to God. "*Go to the Holy Land with God,*" said the Holy Spirit, which is what I did. I went to Jerusalem and walked where Jesus walked. I prayed for my family in many of the places where Jesus prayed. Finally, I prayed on the Mount of Olives and talked to God just as Jesus did.¹⁷⁸ During the process I have described in this book, I have learned that the only sustaining element in this world is love. I would never have gone through this process for myself, though, because I did not feel worthy when I began. However, I would do it over and over again for my family, my father, my mother, my brothers, my extended family, and my friends. As I said earlier, this book began as an answer to my prayer for my family and was not something I understood or even contemplated would be published. But, when you have been given eyes from Heaven, you will do all that is within your power to help those you see suffering. What I have learned is that you can only help those you love when you emulate the love of The Christ. In that state, it very quickly ceases to be about you and becomes only about

another. This concept should not be surprising because selfless love is one of the conditions necessary for Heaven to come. This is how Jesus lived, and it was the basis for every miraculous healing we have read about in the Bible. But you have to be constantly alert because your efforts on behalf of another can quickly become about you. Look again at Archangel Michael's message to me. *"Is it your gain that you are seeking in such work or the return of a soul to Him? My brother [Lucifer] is adept at twisting love for another when it becomes about the self and there are many ways this can happen. Be on your guard."* Once you fight for what you want, the battle becomes about the self and this helps no one. God gave each of us freewill but when we fight for an outcome we want for another, we have been tricked by the dark into trying to take the freewill of another.

If God will not violate our own freewill, we obviously should not attempt to violate anyone else's. Once you have put God's grace before someone, whether that person chooses to reach out to God at that moment is up to that person. Jesus made this very clear when He always said after someone was healed in His presence, *"Your faith has given you Life."*¹⁷⁹ Also, based upon my personal experience, no one "goes there" until that person is ready to do so. This is why Archangel Michael said, *"You cannot measure love, or its impact on another. Do not be deceived by looking for what you cannot see. Visible results do not require Faith to continue. Even their absence strengthens the Faith of those who do His will. Faith is the answer to the great mystery, not tangible results. The moment you love it is already at work in Heaven. By its nature it is of God. God has ordained that it be used for His purpose. There is nothing but celebration in the coming of the Kingdom of Heaven for every moment of love unites His will for all of His children."*

All who have fought for another intuitively understand Archangel Michael's message because they have lived the same experience. But when you are in the heat of the battle, the conflict is no longer just words because you are fighting for a

loved one. This is why you should never allow your emotions to control. This is also why you should never judge the one you are trying to help. If someone feels judgment coming from you, then you cannot help that person heal. We are here to help others by bringing them the grace and love of God. We are not here to judge them. Only God and those Angels who serve Him know what Lucifer has done to each person. Once you realize another's path is not your responsibility, you are liberated. The outcome then is between God and the person. This is why Archangel Michael told me, "*No place in the Bible does it say one has dominion over another human being.*"

My intent in publishing this book is to outline the path I have walked to return home to Heaven. Please understand, though, that this does not make me perfect. I continue to make mistakes and will as long as I am here in a body. This is why I did not exclude any of Archangel Michael's warnings to me that were contained in his messages. Even with all I now know and all I have been taught, I am still subject to being misdirected. As many of us have learned, this is especially true with prayers that involve those in your own family because objectivity is frequently lost. Please fight your natural inclination to try to force those closest to you to do what you want them to do. Once you have been tricked into embracing that position, the battle becomes about you and not the person you love. This is why Lucifer can reappear because compulsion and control are just other forms of fear. God's rules never change and one of those rules is that all souls must do their own work to return home to their Father. As Archangel Michael has told me, "*There are no shortcuts with God.*"

You will note in the message from Archangel Michael that he suggested I "*go to the Holy Land with God.*" Within a week of receiving this message, I flew to Israel with nothing but a round trip ticket, a rental car for a week, and hotel reservations in Tel Aviv for three nights. Once I arrived in Tel Aviv, I prayed for guidance and began looking for a place to stay in Jerusalem.

As usual, there are no limits with God. He led me to Natan Ophir, a rabbi living in Jerusalem who was born and raised in Philadelphia. Natan graduated from college in 1974 and then moved to Israel where he has lived ever since. Natan was looking for someone to rent his apartment for a few weeks so I moved to Jerusalem and stayed with him my entire time in Israel. While Natan was from a completely different culture, I quickly learned that he knew God and His Angels intimately. As we spent time together, each knew the other had had genuine experiences with God and His Holy Spirit even though our frames of reference, terminology, and cultural perspectives were different. What Christians call the Holy Spirit, Jewish theologians call the Divine Presence.¹⁸⁰ As we shared ideas with each other, it became clear that the differences between Christianity and Judaism were simply “words.”

The Great Commission¹⁸¹ was given by Jesus to instruct us to bring the love of The Christ to one another rather than a command to proselytize and convert people to Christianity. Remember, Jesus did not come to establish a religion. We frequently ignore that Christianity did not even exist when Jesus spoke those words in Galilee. In Israel, my new friend and I brought to each other God’s love. He understood that I was a Christian who knew God, and I understood that he was a Jewish rabbi who knew God. During this process, we both grew closer to God ourselves because we resisted the temptation to focus on our cultural differences. I learned to pray with a Jewish rabbi, I also learned how Jewish culture integrates God’s love into people’s lives.¹⁸² I taught this faithful rabbi more about Angels and their work as we experienced the Divine Presence together. Even though our frames of reference and culture could not have been more different, we both felt the grace of God when we prayed with and for each other.

While I was in Israel, I also met Mike Horton, a graphic designer, who helped produce this book. He and I became close friends in a short time. When Natan, Mike, and I prayed

together, we heard from the Holy Spirit that we were to establish a location in Jerusalem where all can come together to pray and feel the grace of God. This location will be called “Jerusalem Place,” and will be in a location where people of all faiths (or no recognized faith) are welcome.¹⁸³ There will be no fee to visit Jerusalem Place and nothing to buy when you arrive. As the Holy Spirit has told me, “*You cannot pay for what is already yours.*” We frequently forget that God’s love is already ours and that God wants us to share His love with others freely and selflessly. Even though Jerusalem Place will ultimately exist in Jerusalem, it is important to remember that the true “Jerusalem Place” is inside each of us. God, Jesus, the Heavenly Host, and individual Angels of the Lord are always with us. All they need is for us to create the conditions necessary for Heaven to come because God has created us perfectly to feel His presence.

A pilgrimage to a site that you understand to be sacred is helpful because the preparation involved in making such a journey helps you to create the proper state of being. Once you learn to create this state, it is always easier to find it again. God and His Heavenly Host are always with us even though we do not always feel their presence. However, once you create the conditions, you will always feel the Holy Spirit working within and through you. My constant prayer has been to ask God to remove from me all things that are not of Him, and He answers my prayer daily. This result will be the same for you.

I have learned a great many things on my journey from this world back to Heaven. I now know that I can become a pure vessel for God when I make the necessary changes because these changes allow the Holy Spirit to use me to help another feel God’s grace. But once someone has felt God’s grace, then that person must choose whether to move closer to God or not. Compulsion and control are not aspects of love and are not part of the path of The Christ. While the path illuminated by The Christ is available to all of God’s children, it is always up to each soul to choose whether (or when) to walk that path. While

this rule is especially hard to follow with your family members, it is the only way you will help them. This means if you are to learn to love as God loves, you must allow those closest to you to remain on their own separate journeys even when you do not approve of their choices. This is when you begin to understand how much God loves each of us.

In order for this world to return to Heaven, two things are necessary. First, we must choose to live our lives following the principles that embody God's love. Second, we must learn to resist the temptation to judge those who have different belief systems. Only God knows what is in another person's heart. This does not mean that we need to believe what another believes. It means that we cannot decide we are superior to another simply because that person's belief system differs from our own. Every person in this world is a child of God. When we understand this, we can then love each other as family just as God loves us. When enough people put these concepts into practice, our world will fully return to God's Heavenly Kingdom. These are among the teachings the Holy Spirit has requested I share with the world.

God has blessed me beyond measure because His Angels and the Holy Spirit have taught me about love and forgiveness. To see how patient, gentle, consistent, supportive, and compassionate God, the Holy Spirit, and individual Angels of the Lord have been with me has been humbling. No question (no matter how seemingly irrelevant) has gone unanswered by them providing the answer did not usurp my freewill or that of another. When I was frustrated, afraid, or angry, they always responded with kindness and love. If I struggled to grasp a concept, they provided me with yet another lesson and more examples always with the gentleness of a descending dove. As the Angel Sinead has told me, "*Angels never judge another child of God, and they never give up on a soul.*" I, for one, am eternally grateful for this! The Angels are now my role models and I strive every day to apply the principles they have taught me. When I do follow their

example, my ability to express love for my family and friends only grows.

My prayer is that you too will find God in your life and in your relationships. Some days will be harder than others but it is in the difficult times that your faith will strengthen if you put total trust in God. Look again at a part of Archangel Michael's message to me - "*Visible results do not require Faith to continue. Even their absence strengthens the Faith of those who do His will. Faith is the answer to the great mystery, not tangible results.*" It has been hard for me to learn this critical lesson as it is the exact opposite of what our results oriented culture teaches. One time Archangel Michael told me, "*God has already answered your prayer. The answer has just not manifested itself yet.*" This is why faith is found in patience, and it is only through faith that we grow closer to our Father.

The photographs at the back of this book include pictures of Angels that I took when visiting churches in and around Jerusalem. There are many articles on the Internet arguing that "orbs" in photos are actually dust, lint, moisture, reflections, electrical emissions, defective cameras, etc., but these theories are all incorrect. In lower light, a digital camera can photograph Angels manifesting in different forms when God wills them to be seen. I invite you to try it yourself. Have someone take some pictures while you pray and you may capture some Angels yourself. It may also be interesting to look at your digital family photos. You may find that Angels have been there all along. Angels are present when there is "great love, great need, or prayer." This is a way for you to build your own empirical database and prove the presence of Angels for yourself. Some people require visible confirmation while others do not. The key is to find faith in the manner that is right for you. As I have said repeatedly, there are many paths to God within the love illuminated by The Christ.

As I walked where Jesus walked, it became readily apparent to me that Jesus experienced all of the things each of us has

experienced in this world because He was also human. As such, Jesus felt all that comes along with living in a body. He experienced great joy and He experienced great suffering. We do ourselves a great disservice when we focus only on Jesus' divinity. Although His divinity is true and wonderful, Jesus' humanity meant that He experienced the same temptations, hurt, and sorrows that we do. As Archangel Michael has told me, "*Jesus had setbacks in His life, but He was a very quick learner.*" As such, it did not take Jesus long to discern that love, and only love, was the answer. When Jesus realized this, He freely and willingly chose God. But Jesus had to make that choice for Himself just as we do. If Jesus were not truly tempted, then He could not show us that it can be done. Jesus had to experience life in this world (with all of its cycles) in order for us to know that suffering and temptation can be overcome. His love for us was and is that great.

Archangel Raphael once told me, "*Jesus so refused to cling to the things of this world they had to nail Him to the Cross.*" This is the challenge for each of us. We live in this world but we are not of this world.¹⁸⁴ As Raphael has said, "*The only permanent things in this world are our souls and what we choose to take from our experiences while here.*" This is why learning to forgive is so important irrespective of what someone has done to either your loved ones or you. When you learn to forgive, you have ceased focusing on the self and started to learn how to love as God loves. Please study Jesus' life again so you have a recent memory of the examples Jesus left for us to follow. As Michael has told me, "*Jesus could not control what Lucifer chose to put in front of Him, but He could always choose to respond in a way that was close to His Father in Heaven.*" This is why Jesus suggested that we should "like our enemy."¹⁸⁵ In so doing, Jesus showed us that responding in love is the only path to Heaven as well as the only way to conquer evil and its effects on us.

This book was written over a seven-year period because I had to live it in order to write about it. This makes this book a

work in process just as your life is. You are in this world because God answered your prayer, which means your life is both a gift and an opportunity. The challenge is for you to overcome the obstacles the dark has placed in your path. Until you do, you will not reach your full potential to serve God. Unfortunately, the talk is easy but the walk is difficult, especially for those of us in the West. Our capitalistic system of government is based on the premise that the community is served when each person focuses on the self. This is perfectly exemplified by the following quote from Adam Smith: “It is not from the benevolence of the butcher, the brewer, or the baker that we expect our dinner, but from their regard to their own interest.” But this concept is not of God. This means each of us in the West have to challenge all that we have been taught if we are to reach our true potential in service to God.

I want to conclude this book with a recent message from Michael. I have been struggling with the full nature of my walk and the changes I still need to make. I prayed for an answer and received this message on March 4, 2013:

My Son:

How would We or the Good Samaritan walk this Earth today? How would We spend each precious moment with which God has graced our time had We flesh? In comfort? In counting the goods, lands, homes and Caesar’s coin that underpins a false reality and a squandered time? Or would we count each moment and each possession as a precious gift that God gave us to give to others such that neither our hands nor our minds can track our giving?

Would We be afraid to walk the earth and share of the table that God granted us in all respects? How many successful transactions, profits, and things would be enough proof for us that we are loved and safe and

graced to be given fruit which when given selflessly is fresh, yet when stored for our own wants rots in stasis?

Would We be quick to act, or place suggestions from Heaven behind other needs, shorten trips to give, delay trips to share and gain both wisdom and knowledge? Would we then wonder why such suggestions over extended periods “do not work”?

Would we be afraid to truly live, to travel and help and find peace at last with our wife, a gift from heaven so that she might heal? Or would we take a short trip so that true intimacy and true change would not ripen fully?

My Son, how would We walk this Earth? For We are coming, and We are here...

When you answer these questions with truth, and if you wish for their answer from Us each day, walk in the footsteps of the Lord, not in the shadow of fear and doubt. Listen to the Lord, and you shall put on a new cloak, and your mantle shall be of Him.

Go with God,

Archangel Michael

These are words from God coming through Archangel Michael. They were sent in love but do not hide from me where my personal challenges lie. There is no judgment here, only love and the truth. Many times we do not want to hear the truth and I am no exception. My prayer is that you will choose to take the journey I am taking. I recently watched an old movie that had the following lines: “A life that is planned is a closed life, my friend. It can be endured perhaps, it cannot be lived.” God came and interrupted my plans and I thank Him for it everyday.

If you have read this far, I hope you know that God is real. The only remaining question is whether He is real for you. I would ask that you pray and create the conditions, and then expect God and His Heavenly Host to come. They will come just as they have always come. This world is returning to what it was originally intended to be. All this world needs is you. Please pray for this world to return to what it once was and what it will be again. When enough people make this their personal prayer, this world will again be fully incorporated into Heaven.

Go with God for He is always with you.

EPILOGUE

A PLACE FOR ALL OF GOD'S CHILDREN

No greater gift can you give those you love than love as it truly is, of God. To love when you are spurned is grace. To love when you must allow another the freewill to turn from God is grace. To love when you are accused of “seeing” what you are not allowed to see is grace. To love when you are there with God reaching out and they turn their back is grace. To love when you are condemned by doing so is grace. To risk your world here, to truly love another as in Heaven, is grace. For loving the way of eternity is grace. For this is love as God loves. This is His grace. This is what you are bringing here. This is part of Heaven.

Archangel Michael

Jesus was tortured, poisoned, and ridiculed by the very people He came to this world to set free. These same people nailed Him to the Cross and killed his body. Yet, as prophesied, He was resurrected after three days and during the months He walked this Earth after His resurrection, He continued to teach His disciples about God, Heaven, and the Holy Spirit. One story that most people remember from the Bible has to do with one of Jesus' followers whose name was Thomas. After Jesus rose from the dead, He allowed Thomas to touch the fatal wound He had received from a soldier's blade as the “proof” Thomas needed to believe that Jesus had indeed returned.¹⁸⁶ After Thomas put his

finger in Jesus' side, Jesus said to Thomas: "*Now that you have seen me, you believe? Blessed are they that do not see me and believe.*"¹⁸⁷ This is still applicable today. If you believe what I have said, then you have rejected the post-Enlightenment frame that our society teaches. As I have said many times in this book, the Holy Spirit only needs a moment to help you feel God's grace. If you have faith and pray to feel God, you will feel Him because there are more Angels here than the world can contemplate. This world is changing and God really is in control.

If you want to feel more, you are invited to pray at "A Place to Feel God," which is an 18-acre spiritual and nature preserve located off of the Natchez Trace Parkway in Tennessee, U.S.A. just north of the Holly picnic area near mile marker 346. This ground is sacred, for it has been a place of prayer for thousands of years. It is a place where Heaven on Earth can be experienced because at this park the Holy Spirit has the spiritual and physical conditions it needs to gather and do God's work. The following are the spiritual rules the Holy Spirit has ordained for this sacred place:

- 1. All people are welcome to pray at "A Place to Feel God" because every soul is a child of God. There is no discrimination based upon skin color, religious affiliation, gender, sexual orientation, economic status, or social status, nor will questions about such things be asked.*
- 2. There are no recreational drugs of any kind allowed on the premises. This expressly includes alcohol.*
- 3. No compensation, donations, or gifts are accepted or taken by the caretakers of "A Place to Feel God." God's love and Heaven cannot be bought, and you cannot pay or barter for that which is already yours.*
- 4. Nothing will be sold at "A Place to Feel God." This includes water, food, and trinkets. This is to ensure the purity of the spiritual work being done here. However, all are free to bring their own water, food, and items they wish to have blessed.*

5. Everyone who comes to “A Place to Feel God” will receive help from God and The Holy Spirit. There will be no proselytizing.

We know this world has been a very difficult place to live while the fierce battle between what is of Heaven and what is against God has raged since Lucifer’s fall. I am thankful that God has commanded that Lucifer’s perceived “earthly reign” will now come to an end as this world completely returns to Heaven. My prayer for you is that you fight your fear and “go through the fire” to find your true self. I know God will send all of His Holy Messengers to give you the help and support you need in this process, just as He did for me. No child of God is alone, and no child of God returns home without the help of The Holy Spirit. Please remember Archangel Raphael’s words when he said, “*There is no security in this world but God.*”

My prayer is that you will seek God with all of your heart, mind, and soul because I know once you find Him, you too will be engulfed in the fruits of the Spirit set forth at Galatians 5:22: “*love, joy, peace, patience, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness and self-control.*” When this occurs, you will realize (as I have) that all of us are perfect vessels to hold the love that is our Father in Heaven because, individually, each of us is “A Place to Feel God.”

I have created the website **aplacetofeelgod.com** where more information can be found about Heaven and the work God is continually doing.

APPENDIX OF ANGELS

The following is a list of the Angels with whom I have spoken in alphabetical order per Archangel Michael's request because there is no hierarchy in Heaven. I have also included a short description of each Angel as well as some of the experiences each had.

Artemis – I have only met Artemis once in this world. He met me at *A Place to Feel God* and taught me that God allows The Holy Spirit to use the weather in order to help His children to understand that God is here with them. He also explained to me that humanity has worshipped God for millennia in structures similar to those that have been built and will be built at *A Place to Feel God*.

Bear Feathers – Bear Feathers was a medicine man who worked closely with Archangel Michael when he was in flesh. Their love for each other allowed God to work through both of them to help all in his tribe.

Didymus – Didymus lost the use of his eyes when he was four-years-old during his time here in this world. Ethnically, he was a Coptic Jew who memorized the entire Old and New Testament and was placed at the head of the Catechetical School of Alexandria. He also taught the concept of universal salvation and believed that, "*in the liberation of all no one remains a captive.*"

Gabriel – Gabriel is the Angel Joseph, the husband of Mary, spoke to. He is also the Angel who spoke to Mohamed and told

him to “proclaim” that which he knew to be true about God. I now understand why Joseph listened to Gabriel and did not simply agree to marry Mary and then divorce her. Archangel Gabriel is one of the four Angels originally put in place by God to manage this world. He comes across as very serious, uses few words, and gets directly to the point. (I have seen him smile though.) He is a messenger for God and comes to deliver news that will be difficult or overwhelming for the person being addressed to hear or to understand. He is also the Angel who comes on behalf of God to take your commitment to serve God.

Harold – I only met Harold once. Harold is my son who never made it out of his mother’s womb. My younger daughter was a twin and Harold was her brother. Harold did not speak to me, but he wrote several pages to me about his love for his mother and me. He taught me that he is always with me. This is true for all parents whose children did not make it out of the womb into this world, even those who were aborted.

Jeremiah – I have had two visits with Jeremiah. The first visit occurred when I was in the “fire,” and Jeremiah came to tell me that the fire was a gift from God that would burn the impurities we acquire from this world. The second visit occurred right before this book was published for the first time. He spoke with me about the concept of marriage from the perspective of Heaven. He said that, in marriage, each person is giving freely to the other without compulsion, seduction, or fear. If the marriage is of God, then each person learns to love the other in the same manner God loves each of them.

Mary Magdalene – Mary is very close to Jesus. She is a “large” Angel and she exudes the love of The Christ. At the time Jesus was living here on this Earth, the apostles looked to Mary as a mother figure. She had that much commitment to God and to His work here on Earth. She experienced and overcame the worst that Lucifer had to offer. When you experience her

compassion, wisdom, and unconditional love, it becomes clear why she was “the mother.” She was the only apostle present at Jesus’ crucifixion and she was the first one at His tomb. After His resurrection and ascension, she lived for thirty years in France outside of Marseille in a cave where she continued to serve God. To this day she honors her commitment by helping women (and those who love them) feel the grace of God so they can heal.

Michael – Archangel Michael is one of the four Angels that God originally put in place to manage this world. Although there is no hierarchy in Heaven, Michael is very close to God and he commands the Holy Host (the archangel component for this world of the Holy Spirit). Michael considers every soul here on Earth to be one of his children and loves each one of us as a father. Michael does not judge us, and he will always help us to get closer to Our Father in Heaven.

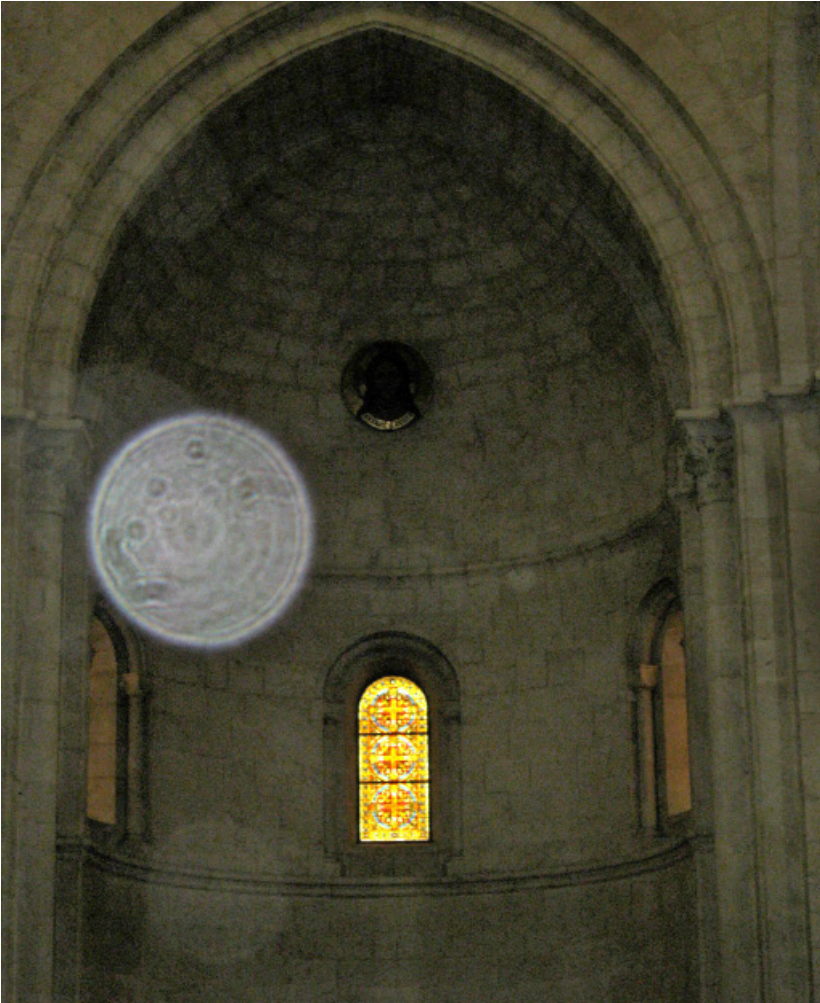
Raphael – Using his own words, Archangel Raphael is the “*wound-cleaning guy*.” Archangel Raphael is one of the four Angels originally put in place by God to manage this world. He said that when he was asked to come to this world to help people heal, he assumed he would be using “*band aids*.” After Lucifer fell, Raphael said he has had to become a “*full-time surgeon*.” Raphael is a very large Angel who uses his humor and his enthusiasm for all of God’s creation to help souls let go of their fear so they can heal. I know that many of you are already familiar with his feeling as he is constantly at work healing those in need.

Simon “King of the Lepers” – Simon was here on Earth during the time of Jesus. While still in Heaven, he prayed to God to be made a king so he could command people to love God. Simon was born into a noble Jewish family but he contracted leprosy when he was a child. As a result, his family abandoned him. At this time in history, leprosy was seen as a sign of the devil and those who had contracted the disease were considered cursed.

For a time, Simon did not understand why God had allowed him to contract leprosy. However, soon he learned to use his skills to organize the lepers into a community to ensure that everyone had food and shelter. Simon was also able to protect them from the severe abuse lepers traditionally received from those without the disease. Simon is known as the leper who invited the Lord Jesus to eat with him. Jesus taught Simon that a true “king” is one who serves the Lord by giving care to those who are most in need.

Sinead/Saint Catherine of Sienna– I have listed Sinead with two names because she has used two of her experiences in this world to teach and help me heal. She comes to teach as Sinead because she believes this experience taught her the most about God’s grace. She does not believe she got it right as St. Catherine of Sienna. While the world venerates Saint Catherine, Sinead believes she learned to serve God selflessly when she came as Sinead. Sinead helps women understand their lives and heal and frequently works with Mary Magdalene. Like Archangel Raphael, Sinead uses humor to help people heal and comes across more as a sister than a mother. She speaks with a strong Irish accent as Sinead lived in Ireland. As a young woman, her beloved husband failed to return from the sea. Rather than become angry and close herself off from love, she turned to God. Sinead spent the remainder of her life traveling alone throughout Ireland teaching people about God and Jesus. Sinead was raped and beaten often in an attempt to stop her from spreading the word of God because there was great persecution toward Christians at this time. She had three children, each of whom was a product of rape. As she taught me, “*everything that Lucifer does can be turned against him.*” Despite the circumstances in which her children were sent to her and the fact that other women had to raise them for her so that they would not be targeted, each of her children continued her work of bringing God to others.

PHOTOGRAPHS



The Dormition Abby, Mount Zion, Jerusalem

The most common manifestation of Angels in photographs I or others have taken associated with prayer is in the form of an “orb” or circle. This manifestation is one described in the Bible. These manifestations have been captured on digital film moving, partially appearing or disappearing, and emerging from behind objects. A search of the Internet will show many of these manifestations appearing around the world associated with prayer, or hovering over images of disaster sites and war zones. If you search the terms “orbs and angels” together you will find many similar manifestations displayed on YouTube and on Christian and/or pray-related websites. As Archangel Raphael told me, “*Where else would you expect Us to manifest?*”



Lutheran Church, Old City, Jerusalem

Photo taken after prayer at the Lutheran Church, Old City, Jerusalem





Holy Sepulchre in Jerusalem

Photo taken after prayer at the Holy Sepulchre in Jerusalem.





Church of the Nativity, Bethlehem
Photo taken after prayer at the Church of the Nativity, Bethlehem.



Another manifestation of Angels in the form of a “human being” with wings, which is also described in the Bible, hovering above the ground during or after prayer or at the site of disaster or war zones. The above photograph was taken during a mission trip to Ghana in Africa in 2008. We were praying at the site of a castle where slaves were held. Notice both the “orbs” and the Angel on the right-hand side that is holding a staff. There was no person there when the photo was taken. (Photo taken by Marianne Gray).

End Notes

PREFACE

¹ The “Holy Spirit” is the Heavenly Host of God’s Angels acting in unison to serve Him. See Chapter 8: The Holy Spirit for more information on this topic.

² I do not want to mislead anyone about how challenging my journey has been. I had many setbacks as I dealt with depression and the constant belief that I was unworthy of being loved by God. I also have had to deal with losing many friends who at one time were close to me. Although I never pushed what I have been taught (or even talked about it unless asked), some became afraid to just be around me and others just quit associating with me.

³ This is a common occurrence when the abuser herself was abused as a child by her parent. The abused child thinks that form of abuse is an expression of love because it is coming from a parent. This is why the abuse is often passed from one generation to the next.

⁴ Archangel Raphael is God’s healing Angel and one of the original four Angels God placed in charge of this world.

⁵ The technical term for this gift is glossolalia. This gift is your ability to speak another language that you do not understand.

⁶ In a later chapter I relate how much alcohol I drank in this life. Most of my excessive alcohol consumption was in college but alcohol in any amount diminishes your ability to feel Heaven’s presence.

⁷ It was later determined that my friend’s wife had been drugged, gang raped, and tortured by a criminal enterprise that placed these rapes on an Internet site. The drugs used by this group included a form of anesthesia that created memory loss along with other terrible side effects.

⁸ Mark 6:7 reads as follows: *And he [Jesus] called his Twelve, and he began to send them two by two, and he gave them authority to cast out evil spirits.* Luke 10:1 reads as follows: *After this, Jesus chose seventy disciples from the other ones, and he sent them two [by] two before himself to every country and town that they were destined to go.*

⁹ Archangel Raphael has also explained to me there is another component to the nature of fear of God. He said some in this world know they are sinners and they know this without any doubt. They also know certain religions believe that sinners will not have a good afterlife. This by itself necessarily invokes fear. These people are also aware that certain scientists believe there is no God because their science cannot prove God's existence. As such, people who consider themselves sinners are stuck in a place where they are counting on religion to be wrong and the scientists to be right. If religion is correct, they believe their only hope is for God to take pity on them. This convoluted thinking necessarily brings separation and fear into a relationship with God.

¹⁰ I do not want anyone to misunderstand this editing process though. The Holy Spirit has blessed the concepts only. The grammatical presentation and writing style, including all errors, are mine.

CHAPTER 1: THE REASON FOR THIS BOOK

¹¹ I am uncomfortable with the name "prophet" being attached to me. This is because our culture often projects onto such people special status, and I am far from perfect. In truth, each one of us is a prophet when we bring God's love selflessly to others without fear. In this sense, I am a prophet just as everyone is when he or she chooses to be. However, because of the apotheosis (making a god out of a person) associated with the word "prophet," I prefer to think of myself as a shepherd. Because it is my freewill, I can take this position without any judgment from Heaven.

¹² *The fruit of the Spirit, however, are love, joy, peace, compassion, fulfillment, grace, faith, gentleness, hope -- the Law does not consecrate these.*

¹³ I know many readers are not Christian and terms such as the Holy Spirit are challenging. For Jews, substitute Divine Presence every time you read Holy Spirit. I am not familiar with other religions but they too will have words to describe the feeling of love in one's life.

¹⁴ Theology has sought to understand God's essence. There is a branch called Apophatic theology, also known as negative theology, where God is described by negation. Apophatic theology is based on the assumption that God's essence is unknowable or ineffable (incapable of being expressed in words) and, as such, the human language is incapable of describing what God is but can describe what God is not. Tertullian wrote in *The Apology*, "...that which is infinite is known only to itself." The Apophatic tradition is often balanced with Cataphatic—or positive theology—and a belief in the incarnation through which God has revealed Himself in the person of Jesus Christ.

¹⁵ Richard Bach and Russell Munson, *Jonathan Livingston Seagull* (London: Pan, 1972).

¹⁶ Richard Bach, *Illusions: The Adventures of a Reluctant Messiah* (New York: Dell Publishing, 1989).

¹⁷ Archangel Raphael recently told me that this world would again be fully part of Heaven if humanity were removed from it. This concept is something we need to contemplate. Lucifer has twisted our freewill so that we accept untruths as the truth. God made this world perfect and it still is. We are the ones who have changed the paradigm (a model or pattern) as God has given us that power. This means it is up to us to use our freewill to initiate and embrace the change that will return this world to what God intended it to be.

¹⁸ The Age of Enlightenment is a term used to initially describe a French movement that began in the 1700's. This movement sought to apply reason to traditional ideas about government and society. This period, often referred to as The Age of Reason, was a time when writers fought against what they considered to be superstition, ignorance, intolerance, and tyranny. Enlightenment thinkers placed great value on the discovery of truth through empirical observation of the nature of things rather than through the study of authoritative sources, such as the Bible.

¹⁹ Empiricism is the view that experience, especially with the senses, is the only true source of knowledge.

²⁰ Philosophers have posited that there are two types of knowledge – a *priori* knowledge and a *posteriori* knowledge. A *priori* knowledge is independent of experience whereas a *posteriori* knowledge is dependent upon empirical evidence. The German philosopher Immanuel Kant explored the foundation of knowledge apart from rational Empiricism. The rationalist must believe that this world is the product of chance apart from any Divine influence if he is to be consistent with empirical principles. I have recently been taught that a *priori* knowledge is the knowledge each soul brings when coming to this world. This knowledge is the composite of all things learned prior to arriving here. As such, your *priori* knowledge includes your ethics and your personality.

²¹ Archangel Michael has told me God is so much more than any collective understanding of Him we have gained through the religions we have created.

²² This has unfortunately been mistranslated as “born again.” The full quote is contained at John 3:3-8 and reads as follows: *Jesus replied and said to him, “Amen, amen, I say to you, if the human being is not **born from above**, they cannot see the Kingdom of God.” Nicodemus said to him, “How can an old man get born, how can he enter his mother’s womb a second time to become born again?” Jesus replied and said to him, “Amen, amen, I am telling you, if the human being is not born from the waters and the Spirit, they cannot enter the Kingdom of God. Whoever is born of the Spirit, is of the Spirit. Do not be surprised that they tell you, that it is expected of you to be born from above. The Spirit moves you for the sake of its own fulfillment, and you listen to its voice; except, you do not know from where it came and where it went. This is how it is with every human being who is **born of the Spirit.**”*

²³ Ibid.

²⁴ During the period that the Bible was actually written, the word that we see in the Bible today as “miracle” was actually “sign” or evidence of God’s power. Archangel Michael explained to me that

this distinction is important. A miracle is something that is out of the ordinary, while a sign or evidence of God's power is something from God given to us as a reminder of who we are and why we came.

²⁵ Galatians 5:22-23: *The fruit of the Spirit, however, are love, joy, peace, compassion, fulfillment, grace, faith, gentleness, hope -- the Law does not consecrate these.*

²⁶ Copernicus waited over a decade before deciding to publish this work. He strongly considered imitating the Pythagoreans, a group that transmitted the mysteries of their philosophy only orally to their own disciples for fear of exposing their ideas to the contempt of the multitude. The first published copy of the *Six Books on the Revolutions of the Celestial Orbits* was handed to him the very day he died. The publisher had made unauthorized changes to the document, especially in the preface, which stated clearly that the information being put forth was a hypothesis and not established fact. This was done in order to avoid recrimination.

²⁷ Galileo is most famous for his astronomical discoveries and his contributions toward the invention of the telescope. The fact that his discoveries supported Copernicus's findings combined with his outspoken nature caused the Catholic Church great alarm. The Church was unable to see how the findings of these two men supported its understanding of certain Biblical passages that placed the earth at the center of the universe. Therefore, the Church assumed the doctrine of Copernicus and Galileo was anti-Scriptural and thus heretical. See the article on Galileo Galilei in the Catholic Encyclopedia at the following Internet address: <http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/06342b.htm>.

²⁸ I am not the only one God is talking to about change. Marianne Williamson has written a wonderful book entitled *The Gift of Change*. She is clearly connected to Heaven and is bringing the wisdom of God to all who want to heal.

²⁹ Matthew 7:15-20: *Beware of false prophets that come to you in sheep's clothing, but from inside they are ravenous wolves. By their fruits you will know them. Why do they pluck grapes from wild brush, or figs from thorn bushes? Thus every good tree brings forth beautiful*

fruit. The bad tree brings bad fruit. Neither a good tree can bear bad fruit, nor a bad tree can bear good fruit. Any tree that does not bring forth good fruit is cut down and burned. Therefore from their fruit you will know them.

³⁰ Even the prophets Moses and Elijah returned as Angels to appear to Jesus and three of the apostles. A reference to this event is found in Matthew 17.1-3: *And after six days, Jesus took Keepa [Peter] and James and his brother John up a high mountain by themselves. And he became transfigured before them, and his visage radiated like the sun, and his clothes turned white like an aura. And there appeared to them Moses and Elijah while talking with him.*

³¹ See Chapter 8 where the Holy Spirit is more fully explained.

CHAPTER 2: THERE IS NO MYSTERY

³² Archangel Michael is the Angel God placed in charge of managing this world. Please see the Appendix of Angels for a further description of him. Archangel Michael is referred to at Daniel 12:1 and at Revelation 12:7. Daniel 12:1-4 reads as follows:

At that time shall arise Michael, the great prince who has charge of your people. And there shall be a time of trouble, such as never has been since there was a nation till that time. But at that time your people shall be delivered, everyone whose name shall be found written in the book. And many of those who sleep in the dust of the Earth shall awake, some to everlasting life ... And those who are wise shall shine like the brightness of the sky above; and those who turn many to righteousness, like the stars forever and ever. But you, Daniel, shut up the words and seal the book, until the time of the end. Many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall increase.

Revelation 12:7 reads as follows: "Now war arose in heaven, Michael and his angels fighting against the dragon. And the dragon and his angels fought back."

³³The Angels refer to this world as an “illusion.” Some of my friends do not like this metaphor so let me explain it. We live in this world and experience it. However, we intuitively know that all creatures will ultimately leave their physical bodies and all the structures we have built will crumble and decay. God did not intend any physical object in this world to be permanent. This is why the Angels say that the tangible things in this world are only here for a moment. However, our souls are immortal and will never die. This is why the Angels have told me the only permanent things in this world are our souls and what we take from our experiences while here.

³⁴ Archangel Michael explained to me that Lucifer created the label “demon” to stimulate fear in us. Lucifer also uses the word “demon” to keep those same souls from believing that God loves them and wants them back. Archangel Michael suggests that these souls be called what they are - “*lost children of God.*”

³⁵ C. S. Lewis, *The Weight of Glory and Other Addresses* (San Francisco, CA: HarperSanFrancisco, 2001).

³⁶ Ibid, p. 12.

³⁷ Your future decisions will decide who you will become.

CHAPTER 3: MY JOURNEY

³⁸ This is the nature of this world. All make choices they regret but these poor choices have been passed down through generations. This is why you should not judge yourself for doing what you were taught to do. Rather, you should “look” and then correct those traits you were incorrectly taught.

³⁹ My parents also were the ones who brought me love. My father gave me unconditional love as a child and, without this, I would never have made it through the gauntlet. In her declining years, my mother unwittingly taught me how to love selflessly. She is also the one who initially taught me as a child about God and His love.

⁴⁰ John 14:6. This is an interesting passage as it is the one institutional Christianity has seized as a command to proselytize and convert others to the religion of Christianity. Please see Chapter 9 for a more complete explanation of its true meaning. When Jesus said this, He was speaking as the earthly embodiment of God's love, which is *The Christ*. The presence of God's love has been here through all time. When anyone reaches out in selfless love to help another, The Christ is always present because selfless love is the path to the Father in this world regardless of whether someone has a religious preference or not.

⁴¹ The prayer is set forth in the Opening Prayer at the beginning of the book.

⁴² An interesting question is why Jesus allowed Himself to be crucified? He knew what was coming and could have easily escaped to Jordan just as King David did when David went over the Mount of Olives to Jordan when Absalom rebelled (see 2nd Samuel 15:30). Jesus, though, walked to the Cross to demonstrate God's love by atoning for our sins because some people believed that this action was required for God's forgiveness. It was not, but because some believed it was necessary, Jesus came. Jesus also came to show us what God's love looks like in a life lived in this world. Some of humanity had been tricked into believing their sins were irredeemable. In response, God sent Jesus. See Romans 4:23-25: *And it was not for his sake alone that this was written in scriptures, that his faith would be reckoned onto righteousness, Except, also for our sake, that for us also it was destined to be reckoned as those who believe in the One who raised our Lord Jesus Christ from the Dead. That he be delivered because of our sins and rise in order to sanctify us.*

⁴³ As I stated in the Author's Note, I am not receiving any compensation from publishing the book. One of God's laws given to me by the Holy Spirit is that a person should not profit personally from proclaiming God's Word. Jesus made this concept clear when He told His apostles, "[a]nd whichever house you enter, stay there, and leave from there [taking nothing from them]." Luke 9:5.

⁴⁴ Archangel Raphael has jokingly described himself as “*the wound-cleaning guy*.” He is the Angel that often worked through the body of Jesus as a principal member of the Holy Spirit when Jesus healed the sick and the possessed.

⁴⁵ “*Pass from flesh*” is the term used by the Holy Spirit to describe the process we call “death” because our souls will never die.

⁴⁶ This is why it is so important to continue to pray for those who are deceased.

⁴⁷ Archangel Michael is known by different names in religions other than Christianity and Judaism.

⁴⁸ Archangel Michael explained to me that since we each come to this world to learn to love, God uses every opportunity possible to teach us about love. For example, if you were taught to hate Muslims and had not overcome this by the time you passed from flesh, Archangel Michael might appear to you as a Muslim. This is the wisdom and majesty of God. The “person” who will be reviewing your life with you, showing you unconditional love, and helping you to re-enter the Kingdom of Heaven will have the appearance of a person in flesh whom you still need to learn to love.

⁴⁹ Heaven has told me that approximately seven percent (7%) of the souls who have come to this world are tricked by Lucifer and choose hell.

⁵⁰ *What Dreams May Come* starring Robin Williams is a movie that is excellent at depicting the true nature of hell.

⁵¹ According to the Holy Spirit, “to the universe” means the following: *Upon Jesus’ visible return to this world, God has ordained a different frame for this world. Both those in spirit and in flesh who can understand this frame will become one with God, Heaven, and the Holy Spirit. However, there will be some souls who cannot understand this frame at that moment because the world, as they understood it, no longer exists. It is these souls who will be ‘cast into the universe.’ From that point, because of this disconnect, it will be more difficult for them to find their way back home to Heaven. However, the journey is never impossible.*

⁵² Origen, *On First Principles* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock Publishers, 1973).

⁵³ One time when I was upset with someone for not immediately embracing God's love, Michael told me that I should show this person the same patience God show me when I was "*knowingly violating His commandments.*" I do know something about God's unconditional love.

⁵⁴ The Catholic Church now considers both Origen and Didymus to be Saints.

⁵⁵ This doctrine posits that God provides a soul with many manifestations of existence so the soul can have different experiences throughout God's Kingdom. I have been told that God creates the means for each soul's continual expression and growth for eternity. However, Archangel Michael recently told me the soul of a person never comes back in animal form or vice versa

⁵⁶ Matthew 7:3: *Why do you see the straw in your brother's eye, and the beam that is before your eye you do not notice?*

⁵⁷ John 12:47-50: *And whoever hears my words and observes them not, I will not condemn them. For I did not come to condemn the universe, except to give Life to the universe. Whoever persecutes me and does not accept my teachings, there will be someone who judges them. The Manifestation that I represent, will judge them on the last day. That which I of my own self did not utter, except the Father who sent me did, He gave me power as for what to say and what to speak. And I know that his commandment represents everlasting Life. I speak thus as my Father told me to speak, thus I speak.*

⁵⁸ I saw a humorous way of conveying this concept on a sign in front of a church in North Carolina. It said, "Many want to serve God, but only as His advisor."

CHAPTER 4: ANGELS

⁵⁹ Gender as we understand it does not exist in Heaven. However, Angels present themselves to us in a way that we can relate to and in the manner that best allows them to deliver God's Word.

⁶⁰ Throughout history there have been cultures that understood this concept. Many Native American tribes and other indigenous peoples understood this and taught their children that all life was sacred and should be respected since it was of Creator. In the book *The Origin of Consciousness in the Breakdown of the Bicameral Mind* by Julian Jaynes, the author believes that people actually did hear voices of gods (angels) most of the time until a shift occurred around 1000 B.C.E.

⁶¹ It is commonly stated that we only use about 10% of our brain to function and there is confusion about what the remainder of the brain is designed to do. The Angels have told me this additional capacity is designed by God to enable us to perfectly communicate with Him while we are here.

⁶² Steven Fanning, *Mystics of the Christian Tradition* (London: Routledge, 2001).

⁶³ *Ibid*, p. 216.

⁶⁴ This differentiation is obvious in the "one-drop rule." The one-drop-rule is a term in the United States where people were classified as black if they had any African ancestry. It is also an example of hypodescent where children of a mixed race couple were automatically assigned to the race with the "lower status" within that society at the time. The one-drop rule was put into law in the twentieth century. For example, Virginia enacted the concept in the Racial Integrity Act of 1924 (following the passage of similar laws in numerous other states). Before the twentieth century and despite the strictures of slavery, in the antebellum years free people could have between one-eighth and one-quarter African ancestry (depending on the state) and still be legally white. Similarly, people of partial Native American descent were usually classified as Native American. In the early years of these mixed unions and marriages, the fathers were usually European

and the mothers Native American. Most Native American tribes had matrilineal descent systems, so within those communities, they considered the children to belong to the mother's people.

⁶⁵ Op. cit., p. 216.

⁶⁶ See Chapter 11 on False Realities.

⁶⁷ John 15:19: *And if you were of the world, [then] the world would have been kind to me. Except you are not of this world. But because I chose you [out] from this world, The world hates you.*

⁶⁸ Colossians 2:18: *And let no human being through the gentleness of spirit instill in you the obligation to worship the work of angels, anticipating what cannot be seen, and to vainly accommodate their own ideas of the flesh.*

⁶⁹ Richard Bach, *Illusions The Adventures of a Reluctant Messiah* (New York: Dell Publishing, 1989), p. 177.

CHAPTER 5: WHO ARE WE AND WHY ARE WE HERE?

⁷⁰ Ibid, p. 128.

⁷¹ This quote comes from Archangel Michael.

⁷² The recent movie *Avatar*, directed and written by James Cameron, is a fairly accurate representation of our life in this world. Earth is just like the moon Pandora depicted in the movie. It should not surprise you that Archangel Michael suggested I see this movie.

⁷³ I have been told that the youngest soul here is over one million years old.

⁷⁴ I meet with Angels on a frequent basis and have lately started keeping a journal in which I document what I was told. These writings can be found on the Internet at aplacetofeelgod.com under the tab *Teachings From Heaven* and then the tab *Recent Encounters with Heaven*.

⁷⁵ Traditionally in Native America, a “medicine man” or “medicine woman” was anyone who had wisdom about God (Creator), the Holy Spirit, and Heaven and who utilized this gift to selflessly help those in need. A “good” medicine person often had the least material possessions in the tribe as most of his or her things were passed along to others.

⁷⁶ What was really happening was that Heaven was reaching out to me. Remember, Angels of the Lord can appear to us in the form that will best help us feel God’s grace. At that time in my life, I did not believe I was worthy of a visit from an Angel and certainly not Archangel Michael. By Archangel Michael visiting me as a Native American elder, he helped to ease my fear and change my frame of reference.

⁷⁷ If an Angel of the Lord did choose to lie, then that Angel would immediately leave your presence because his or her state of being would have changed. While this world exists in duality with some of us living in the world and some of us living in Heaven, Angels who serve God can only exist in the state of being we call Heaven.

⁷⁸ Behavior includes our thoughts, actions, and intent.

⁷⁹ Matthew 19:23-24: *Jesus then told his disciples, “Amen, I am telling you, the Kingdom of heaven is impenetrable for the rich person. Again, I am telling you that it is more plausible for the camel to enter the eye of the needle, rather than for a rich person to enter the Kingdom of God.”* The “eye of the needle” refers to a small door that was built into a city gate. This served as protection for the city by preventing more than one person from passing through the door when the gate was closed.

⁸⁰ Op. cit., p. 177.

⁸¹ It was historically common for women who were raped to be considered unclean and unworthy in the eyes of their families and communities

⁸² Archangel Michael has told me that when you take responsibility for something that is not your fault, your soul begins to “die.” This is how

Lucifer hurts you. Once you embrace Lucifer's lies, he has tricked you into embracing mortality. Fortunately, none of this bruising is permanent.

⁸³ Luke 23:43

⁸⁴ Mark 14:3: *And while he was in Bethany, in Simon's house for lepers, as they were dining, a woman carried a ceramic vessel of Nardine incense, top quality and very expensive, and she opened it and poured its contents on the head of Jesus.*

⁸⁵ Matthew 6:7-13: *And when you pray, do not chant like the pagans, for they expect through babbling [through much words] they will be heard. Thus do not imitate them, for your Father knows what you will need, before you ask for it. Therefore, this is how you shall pray:*

*Our heavenly Father, hallowed is your name.
Your kingdom is come.
**Your will is done,
as in heaven so also on earth.**
Give us the bread for our daily need.
And leave us serene,
just as we also allowed others serenity.
And do not pass us through trial,
except separate us from the evil one.
For yours is the Kingdom,
the Power and the Glory,
to the end of the universe,
of all the universes. Amen!*

CHAPTER 6: FREEWILL

⁸⁶ *Funk and Wagnalls Standard College Dictionary* (New York: Funk & Wagnalls Co., 1977), p. 1219.

⁸⁷ For some reason, even if we believe we are immortal, we assume our immortality commences at our birth in this world.

⁸⁸ Remember, in the midst of the worst physical torture imaginable, Jesus prayed for the souls of those who were working so hard to destroy Him..

⁸⁹ God provides the means and gifts that best allow us to have our prayers answered. These gifts include our blood and physical characteristics.

⁹⁰ Archangel Michael explained to me that before Lucifer chose to reject God and His love, only Healing Angels worked here to bring God's grace to us. Once Lucifer fell and put fear into the souls God sent here, it became harder for these souls to feel God's grace because fear blocks one's ability to feel God's love. In response, God created Archangels who keep souls safe so they can feel the grace of God being brought to them by Healing Angels. Archangels are also the only Angels who can pull a soul out of hell, which is the ultimate place of separation from God. Through prayer, faith, and love, Archangels and Healing Angels working together can restore any soul back to God and Heaven no matter what Lucifer has done to that soul or tricked that soul into doing to others. But that soul must first exercise his or her freewill to ask for such help.

⁹¹ Archangel Raphael recently told me this world would be fully part of Heaven again if all people were removed. The Angels can be here because part of this world still resides in Heaven. We are the ones who have been tricked into accepting Lucifer's hell. This is why this world will again be fully part of Heaven when enough of us pray for it to happen.

⁹² Archangel Raphael has defined a "prophet" as, "*A person in flesh who experiences God's grace through the means of the Holy Spirit and then carries the message from Heaven to those of this world.*"

⁹³ According to Archangel Michael, true suffering occurs "*when people cannot feel God because of something they, themselves, are doing or something others are doing to them.*"

⁹⁴ John 10:25

⁹⁵ There are certain things that make feeling God difficult. Fear or having drugs in your system are two of the biggest blocks to feeling

God's grace and the Holy Spirit. This includes certain types of prescription medication as well as alcohol. If you do not feel God's grace right away, this does not mean He is not there. Continue to ask God to help you feel Him in your life. You will feel Him when the time is perfect for you because God knows when you are ready.

⁹⁶The version of The Lord's Prayer that most of us have been taught says, "*Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven.*"

⁹⁷Another example of Lucifer tricking us into separation is grammar. The Bible translates what Jesus said as the Son of Man because Jesus lived in a patriarchal society that diminished the role of women. Clearly, Son of Man means both man and woman in the universal sense of all humanity.

⁹⁸Jesus' ability to remain close to God is an indication of how pure He was and is. Never assume though that He did not and does not have to continuously use His freewill to remain next to God. He had and has the same choices we all do. He showed us what is possible and everything Jesus did we can do. As it is recorded in the Bible, He is "*the way and the truth and the Life.*" John 14:1-7 reads as follows:

Do not lose heart, believe in God and in me believe. My Father's abodes are great enough. And if not, I will make them so, when I go to provide you a country. And if I go to provide you a country, I will come back to settle you with me, that where I come, then you too can be. And where I go to, you know where that is, and the way, you know that too. Thomas said to him, "Our Lord, we do not know where you are going and how can we know where is the way?" Jesus said to him, "I am the way and the truth and the Life. No one comes to my Father except through me. If you know me, you also know my Father. And from now on you know Him and you see Him."

⁹⁹Lucifer chose to remove himself from God when he was one of the four Angels in Heaven appointed by God to help manage this world.

¹⁰⁰ Genesis 3:1-13: *And the serpent rose higher than all the creatures of the wilderness, that the Lord God created, and the serpent said to the wife, “Did God truly say that you should not eat from all the trees of Paradise?” And the wife said to the serpent that of the fruit of all the trees of Paradise you may eat, And the fruit of the tree in the midst of Paradise, God said that you shall not eat from it and you shall not go near it, so you will not die. And the serpent said to the woman, “You will not die the death, Because God knows that in the age that you eat from it, your eyes will be opened and you will become like Gods, knowing the good and the evil.” And the wife saw that the tree was beautiful to eat, and it was pleasing to the eye, and the tree was pleasing to look at, and she took from its branches and ate, and she gave also to her husband with her and he also ate. And both of them, their eyes opened up and they discovered that they were naked, and they took fig leaves and covered themselves. And they heard the voice of the Lord God as He walked in Paradise at the end of the age, Adam and his wife hid themselves from the Lord God in the trees of Paradise. And the Lord God called Adam and told him, “Where are you running?” And he said, “I heard your voice in Paradise and I saw that I was naked and so I hid myself.” And the Lord said to him, “Who saw that you were naked; behold, did you eat of the tree that I told you not to eat?” And Adam said, “The wife who was with me, she gave me of the tree and I ate.” And the Lord God said to the wife, “Who made you do it?” And she said, “The serpent misled me and I ate.”*

CHAPTER 7: LOVE AND FAITH

¹⁰¹ Archangel Michael used these exact words because he knows I like the movie *Gladiator*, but that does not change their meaning or importance. God uses many avenues in this world to reach us and those lessons do not always come from theologians or those whom we consider to be experts on God. Think of the *Star Wars* movies and their depiction of the battle between good and evil. The ideas for these films originated in Heaven even though the writers may not have realized it.

¹⁰² In *The Shack*, God appears as a person.

¹⁰³ Luke 24:13-32 describes Jesus appearing to two apostles (one named Cleopas) on their way to Emmaus and explaining “*about Himself from all the Books of Scripture.*” The Bible does not contain what Jesus said.

¹⁰⁴ Deists believe that there is a God who created the Universe but that God does not intervene in the functioning of the natural world. Rather, God allows the world to be controlled solely by the natural laws He created. As such, deists do not recognize any supernatural events such as miracles.

¹⁰⁵ We have all heard stories about the “dog that runs into a burning building and saves a child” or the “dog that pulls its owner out of a hole in the ice.” Because the animal had love for the person in trouble, an Angel of the Lord was able to enter the animal and use its body to help the person in need.

¹⁰⁶ Psalm 91:11-12 (From the New Revised Standard Version): *For he will command his angels concerning you to guard you in all your ways. On their hands they will bear you up, so that you will not dash your foot against a stone.*

¹⁰⁷ Archangel Raphael also told me, “*I am over 750 million years-old and in all that time I have never seen fear bring a positive experience to anyone.*”

¹⁰⁸ An example of this is Raychandbhai Ravajibhai Mehta, a close friend of Mahatma Gandhi, telling Gandhi that all the great religions were fundamentally equal and none was superior because they all brought people closer to God.

¹⁰⁹ See Chapter 8 for a full explanation of the Holy Spirit.

¹¹⁰ Archangel Michael has explained to me that, “*Jesus did not come to establish a religion. Rather, Jesus laid down love that the recipient can give to others -- love that is not for yourself or for your own self-aggrandizement.*” Archangel Michael also told me that people want the sword even though Jesus said (as recorded at John 14:6-7), “*I am the way, the truth, and the Life. No one comes to the Father except through me. If you know me, you also know my Father. And from now*

on you know Him and you see Him.” Nothing Jesus did or said even hinted at hurting another.

CHAPTER 8: THE HOLY SPIRIT

¹¹¹ Aramaic was the language Jesus spoke when He walked this Earth. The Bible has gone through multiple translations and, with each translation, Lucifer has the opportunity to slightly twist the meaning by tricking or influencing the translator. I have used the translation of the Ancient Aramaic New Testament by Victor N. Alexander because Archangel Michael has told me this translation is closest to the original meaning. This translation can be purchased at www.v-a.com.

¹¹² Your “circle of love” is composed of souls who knew you before you came to this world, as well as others who love you. They are part of your experiences here. You are never alone while you are here even though you may not realize it.

¹¹³ As I said earlier, Lucifer chose to leave Heaven because he was angry with God. Contrary to our belief, Michael and all of the Angels in Heaven did everything they could to hold on to Lucifer to keep him from falling. He is their brother after all (and technically ours too). But when you want to leave God’s presence, God gives you that right.

¹¹⁴ Op. cit., p. 100.

¹¹⁵ Matthew 14:17-21: *They told him, however, “We do not have anything, except for five loaves and two fish” Jesus told them, “Bring them here to me.” And he invited the crowds to dine, sitting on the ground, and he took the five breads and the two fish, and he gazed at heaven, and he blessed them and broke them and gave to his disciples, and those disciples divided them to the crowds. And they all ate and were satisfied, and they took up the leftovers, filling twelve baskets. However, those people that ate were like five thousand, besides the women and the young.*

¹¹⁶ Matthew 14: 25: *In the fourth watch of the night, Jesus came to them, as he walked over the waters.*

¹¹⁷ This may seem heretical, but each of us should pray for Lucifer's soul too. He is a lost child of God and a prisoner of his own lies.

¹¹⁸ John 8:32.

¹¹⁹ In *The Great Divorce*, C. S. Lewis describes hell as a dungeon in one's own mind where the door has been locked from the inside.

CHAPTER 9: JESUS AND HIS PATH

¹²⁰ If you look at Victor Alexander's translation for Matthew 25:46, the English word "eternal" is really "to the universe." Matthew 25:46 reads: "*And they will go these to eternal torment and the saintly to eternal life.*" *To the universe* is where those souls will go who are incompatible with this world when it is fully part of Heaven again. They will be reached in another way and time.

¹²¹ Many have wondered what the phrase "Son of Man" means. The explanation I have been given by the Holy Spirit is as follows: "*The part of each of us that is life is God. He is in each of us. Therefore, when Jesus referred to Himself as the "Son of Man," He was referring to the fact that we are all part of God and, therefore, He is the Son of God residing within every man and woman.*"

¹²² The following passage appears in the Greek version of *Antiquities of the Jews* xviii 3.3, in William Whiston's translation. This is known as the Testimonium Flavianum.

Now there was about this time Jesus, a wise man, if it be lawful to call him a man; for he was a doer of wonderful works, a teacher of such men as receive the truth with pleasure. He drew over to him both many of the Jews and many of the Gentiles. He was [the] Christ. And when Pilate, at the suggestion of the principal men amongst us, had condemned him to the cross, those that loved him at the first did not forsake him; for he appeared to them alive again the third day; as the divine prophets had foretold these and ten thousand other wonderful things concerning him. And the tribe of Christians, so named from him, are not extinct at this day.

¹²³ Archangel Michael knows the content of every book that has ever been written, he knows every book that is being written, and he knows every thought or action that has ever been thought or taken by those who have ever been here. He knows where everything is in the world at every moment from the animate to the inanimate. This is for two reasons: the first is that God chooses to share His omnipotence with Michael at times for God's purpose. The second is that Archangel Michael can instantly access other Angels who have the first-hand knowledge he needs. Other than raw information, Archangel Michael also talks to all souls before they come to this world and he is the first being each soul talks to on the way out of this world.

¹²⁴ Large is an interesting concept. Michael uses this word in an attempt to convey to us what is really happening within the limitations of our ability to understand. Archangel Michael has explained to me that you get "larger" as you grow closer to God. This means you become more capable of going everywhere with God. While this world is part of Heaven, it has certain limitations. One of those limitations is that it is impossible for a "large" being to come to this world inside of a body unless God decides otherwise.

¹²⁵ The Transfiguration is described in The Catholic Encyclopedia as follows: "... the culminating point of His public life, as His baptism is its starting point and His ascension [to Heaven] its end." Please refer to Matthew 17:1-6, Mark 9:1-8, and Luke 9:28-36 for descriptions of the event.

¹²⁶ It is important to keep in mind that the Bible has been subject to numerous translations coming through multiple languages and thousands of scribes. Each time the books in the Bible were copied or put into another language, Lucifer had an opportunity to twist the freewill of the scribe or translator. This is why Archangel Michael told me a recent translation by Victor Alexander is closest to the writers' original meanings. Mr. Alexander is in the process of translating the entire Bible directly from the Aramaic into English.

¹²⁷ Michael chooses his words very carefully and he used "the crowd" to signify that fear affects all races and one race is not more prone to act on fear than another.

¹²⁸ Luke 6:49: *And the one who hears but does not obey, resembles the man who builds his house on the soil without a foundation. And when the river touches it, it falls in that very hour, and the fall of that house is great indeed [and it happens its fall is great of that house].*

¹²⁹ John 8:32.

¹³⁰ Frank Viola and George Barna, *Pagan Christianity?: Exploring the Roots of Our Church Practices* (Carol Stream, IL: Barna, 2008).

¹³¹ In Matthew 10:7-14 Jesus said: “*And when you go, preach and say that the Kingdom of Heaven is approaching. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers and cast out demons; **freely you received, freely give. Do not take gold or silver or bronze in your purses. And do not take a jar for the trip and a pair of shirts for extra sandals and neither a staff, for the laborer deserves his keep. However, whatever town or village you enter, as he was worthy in it, and stay there until you leave. And when you enter the house, ask for the peace of that house. And if the house is worthy, your peace will be upon it. However, if it is not worthy, your peace will return to you. Whoever does not receive you, however, or does not listen to your words, as you leave that house or town, shake the dust off your feet.***” (Emphasis mine.)

¹³² Op. cit., p 138.

94% feel pressured to have an ideal family life;

90% work more than forty-six hours a week;

81% say they have insufficient time with their spouses;

80% believe that pastoral ministry affects their family negatively;

70% have lower self-esteem than when they entered ministry;

50% feel unable to meet the demands of the job;

80% are discouraged or deal with depression;

More than 40% report that they are suffering from burnout, frantic schedules, and unrealistic expectations;

33% consider pastoral ministry an outright hazard to the family;

33% have seriously considered leaving their position in the past year;

40% of the pastoral resignations are due to burnout

¹³³ Anyone can find God’s love in any man-made religion or no religion. Please read the Gospel of Thomas. Thomas’ message was that all are equipped to find God without the intervention of an intermediary.

¹³⁴ Archangel Michael recently educated me on why forgiveness is the only avenue to overcome hate. He explained that if those who have been hurt do not forgive, then over time the “victims” will themselves become the oppressors, and the cycle will repeat. Love is the only answer and true love only incorporates compassion and forgiveness and not judgment.

¹³⁵ Luke 23:34.

¹³⁶ Don Piper and Cecil Murphey, *90 Minutes in Heaven: a True Story of Death & Life* (Grand Rapids, MI: Revell, 2007).

¹³⁷ See Matthew 10:7-14 regarding not taking anything for yourself when healing people or otherwise teaching them about God. There it is recorded that Jesus said: *And when you go, preach and say that the Kingdom of Heaven is approaching. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers and cast out demons; freely you received, freely give. Do not take gold or silver or bronze in your purses. And do not take a jar for the trip and a pair of shirts or extra sandals and neither a staff, for the laborer deserves his keep. However, whatever town or village you enter, ask who is worthy in it, and stay there until you leave. And when you enter the house, ask for the peace of that house. And if the house is worthy, your peace will be upon it. However, if it is not worthy, your peace will return to you. Whoever does not receive you, however, or does not listen to your words, as you leave that house or town, shake the dust off your feet.*

¹³⁸ My intention is not to launch an attack on institutional churches. As I have said elsewhere, institutions by themselves are neutral and people go to church to find God. It is the manner in which each institution is being led that determines whether its members move closer to or further from God. If everyone brings back to his or her house of worship the love that is of God, then each institution’s shift toward God will help this world to return to what it was intended by God to be.

¹³⁹ An example of some typical and pointedly harsh criticism of the Catholic Church in the mainstream media comes from Mark Warren in a February 2011 *Esquire* article where he describes the Catholic Church as an institution “...whose chief vicar, an infallible man, lives

in a palace in the middle of his own city-state while still claiming a vow of poverty and a simple Christ-like existence... The same vicar who presided over revelations — long-known but secretly guarded, that many of his employees were criminals and child molesters — not with the mien of the keeper of his flock but rather with the ruthless demeanor of the CEO of a massive corporation lawyering up against the barrage of lawsuits to come...”

¹⁴⁰ The current state of our institutional churches mirrors the Pharisees and the Sadducees during Jesus’ time. The Pharisees and Sadducees had allowed themselves to be more concerned about themselves and their power than spreading God’s love.

¹⁴¹ Please remember the text at footnote 127 and do not judge the Jewish race for Jesus’ death.

¹⁴² If you search the Internet closely, you will find two letters I once wrote that drip with condemnation and judgment on the homosexual issue. This is just one of the painful things I had to look at in my life.

¹⁴³ As I set forth in another footnote, this type of judgment is captured in the sign I saw in front of a church in North Carolina that said, “Many want to serve God but only as His advisor!”

¹⁴⁴ In 2005, the legal department of a national church wrote a memorandum that gave legal advice to the church’s regional committees on how to deal with local congregations that wanted to leave the church and take the church building with them. The following are selected portions of that memorandum:

- Lawsuits against dissenting congregations should pejoratively identify them as schismatics, even in the titles of the complaints.
- Take steps to secure local church property by filing affidavits in public court “for the purpose of warning all persons the title to the real property is in dispute.” “Moreover, send a letter to all banks and other institutions that hold accounts for the particular church.” That letter would claim the [national church’s regional committee] has jurisdiction over the church; inform bankers and other institutions about the denomination’s

property trust clause; and direct them to release no assets or change their title pending notice from the [national church's regional committee].

- “Put the [national church's regional committee] and the local church's insurance companies on notice.” The purpose is to prevent the dissenting congregation from using its insurance coverage to pay attorneys' fees in a property dispute.
- When necessary, change the locks and “secure” the property.
- Try to get the case before a judge whose religious affiliation (specifically, Presbyterian, Episcopalian, Methodist and Roman Catholic) would make him sympathetic to the property claims of hierarchical denominations. “For a judge from an Episcopal system (Catholic and Episcopalian), it is very helpful to say, ‘The [national church's regional committee] is the bishop.’” The recommendation warns against going before a judge who is a Baptist.
- Keep the original church name and corporation within the [national church] to ensure that the local congregation's endowments and future estates will be secure.
- If case law is favorable to your [national church's regional committee], file a motion for summary judgment as soon as practicable. It is not helpful to allow the schismatics to develop a record.

¹⁴⁵ Matthew 22:21.

¹⁴⁶ According to Archangel Michael, the genesis of all sin is fear. Archangel Michael told me that he is more than two billion years old, and that in all that time he has only seen God act in and through love. Sometimes God does not tell Archangel Michael or other members of the Holy Spirit why He is doing what He does, but His love is always apparent.

¹⁴⁷ Before Jesus walked this Earth, God always forgave the sins of those who were here. God sent Jesus to this world in answer to Archangel Michael's very specific prayer. This is why Jesus's life and choices are the perfect example for us to follow.

¹⁴⁸ Matthew 26:36-46: *Then Jesus came with them to a place that is called Gethsemane, and he said to his disciples, "Sit here while I go pray." And he fetched Keepa [Peter] and both sons of Zebedee, and he began to feel sorrow and depression. And he said to them, "My soul is sorrowing to death. Stick with me then and hold the vigil." And he stepped away a little, and fell over his face, and he prayed and said, "My father, if it is possible, get me through this cup, however, not as I wish, except as you will." And he came to his disciples and found them sleeping and he said to Keepa [Peter,] "You were not able thus to hold the vigil with me for one hour? Wake up and pray so as not to enter into temptation. The spirit is willing, but the flesh is failing." Again he went for a second time and prayed and said, "My father, if it is not possible for this cup to pass, except that I drink it, let it be according to your will." And he came again and found them sleeping, for their eyes were heavy [with sleep.]. And he left them and went again to pray for the third time, and to Him the Manifestation he spoke. And then he came to his disciples and said to them, "From henceforth you can sleep and be restful, behold the hour has arrived, and the Son of Man will be betrayed into the hands of sinners. Rise, let us go, behold, my betrayer has arrived."*

CHAPTER 10: LUCIFER'S TRICKS

¹⁴⁹ *And God created the human being to resemble His own visage; He created them male and female. And God blessed them and said to them, "Multiply and increase, and fill the earth and its environments, and have authority over the fish in the sea and the birds of the sky and the four-legged animals and all the creatures that crawl over the earth." And God said, "Behold, I give you every plant with seeds that is sown on the face of all the earth, and every fruit bearing tree whose seeds are planted, for you to be a source of food. And [I give you] all the creatures of the wilderness and all the birds of the sky and everything that walks the earth that has a living soul, and all the herds [as a source] for food," and it was so. And God saw all that He created, and, behold, it was truly beautiful. And that was the evening and the morning of the sixth eon.*

¹⁵⁰ Charles Pierre Baudelaire, a French poet, once said, “The greatest trick the Devil ever pulled was convincing the world he didn’t exist.”

¹⁵¹ When I taught Sunday School to high school aged young adults, I asked them if they had ever seen a beautiful little girl in kindergarten say that she wanted to be a drug addicted prostitute when she grew up. Yet Lucifer tricks women into going there every day.

¹⁵² This is exactly what Lucifer believes about himself and shows how little he understands about God’s love.

¹⁵³ The “fire,” as it is referred to in the Bible, is the description given to the consequences that spring from the choices we make that take us far from God. It does not matter that we have been tricked into making these choices.

¹⁵⁴ Disease can be the result of choices or it can be the result of prayer. Disease is a gift when it is used to show us our choices are not getting our prayers answered. But some people want to experience this world in a broken body. I once asked how many people in a particular hospital were there because of their choices versus those who came to have experiences in broken bodies. The answer was 82% because of choices and 18% because they prayed to have the experiences. This world is never what it seems.

¹⁵⁵ Peter Wust, a German philosopher, once said, “Great things happen to those who pray. But we learn to pray best in suffering.”

¹⁵⁶ The perspective of this world is that Sarah somehow “consented” to whatever happened once she consented to drink.

¹⁵⁷ Archangel Michael has told me “*God sends life when there is great need or great love.*”

¹⁵⁸ Matthew 7:1-5: *Do not judge, so as not to be judged. For by the judgment that you judge, you shall be judged, And by the measure that you measure, you shall be measured. Why do you see the straw in your brother’s eye, and the beam that is before your eye you do not notice? Otherwise, how can you tell your brother, ‘Let me take the straw out of your eye,’ and, behold, the beam in [front of] your eye? Hypocrites,*

first, clear the beam from your eyes, and then it will be clear for you to take out the straw from your brother's eye.

¹⁵⁹ Archangel Raphael has told me shame comes from “*seeing yourself through the eyes of another.*” It also comes when you own the judgment you feel coming from someone else. Shame is not something any of us should carry because shame is not of God. Only God can judge and I can assure you shame is not part of that judgment.

¹⁶⁰ From Heaven's perspective, rape occurs when someone's freewill is impaired – either by foreign substances or by compulsion. While only God can judge a soul, there is no prohibition on acknowledging that certain actions either move someone closer to or further from God. Purposely giving alcohol to another in order to influence her freewill and gain access to her body is not an action that is close to God

¹⁶¹ Only God can send life and God never sends life as punishment. When a woman carries a child in her womb, she is carrying part of Heaven with her. God will send life even when He knows the child will be aborted. In my example, God knew the people involved in Sarah's situation had great need to feel Heaven and so God answered this need by sending a child. One example of how little we understand about how God has designed this world to work is a recent study that found cells from an aborted fetus living in the brain of the mother. This study can be found at <http://www.lifesitenews.com/blog/scientists-discover-aborted-baby-cells-living-in-mothers39-brains/>.

¹⁶² See Chapter 11 on False Realities.

¹⁶³ At times, some have created sustainable systems. In Some Native American social structures, people achieved status through giving. The poorer people become the leaders and tribal council because they gave the most to their community.

¹⁶⁴ It is the same for politicians because, in a politician's world, the worst thing that can happen is to lose power. As such, all politicians are motivated by fear.

CHAPTER 11: LUCIFER'S FALSE REALITIES

¹⁶⁵ Brain chemistry as a function of pornography addiction is explored in the following book: Mark B. Kastleman, *The Drug of the New Millennium – The Brain Science Behind Internet Pornography Use* (Provo, UT: Power Think Publishing, 2007).

¹⁶⁶ In an article published in *The Lancet*, Professor David Nutt and others found that alcohol was more harmful than heroin in terms of the overall dangers to the individual and the cost to society. This article is published in *The Lancet* at Vol. 376 No. 9752 pp. 1558-1565.

¹⁶⁷ Brain chemistry is explored as a function of alcoholism in the following book: Katherine Ketcham, William F. Asbury, Mel Schulstad, and Arthur P. Ciaramicoli, *Beyond the Influence: Understanding and Defeating Alcoholism* (New York, NY: Bantam Books, 2000).

¹⁶⁸ To give you an example that the Holy Spirit knows everything about our lives, I once asked what quantity of alcoholic drinks I had consumed. Although I drank hard spirits in college and only later switched to wine, I asked Archangel Raphael to tell me how much I had drunk but convert the quantity into light alcohol content wine and not hard spirits. He told me 2,753 gallons and 4.32 ounces. When you do the math, that is one bottle of wine per day for 37 consecutive years. I reached this sum by drinking to get drunk in college and then consuming wine or spirits most days after work and on weekends later in my life. I do know something about drinking and hiding. Thankfully, I was never a chemically addicted alcoholic.

¹⁶⁹ One danger that must be avoided is judging those who have not yet quit drinking. Lucifer creates this illusion of judgment even when it is not present so those who are drinking remain stuck. This is why drinkers are uncomfortable around those who have stopped. They are tricked into believing that those who have stopped are judging them and react accordingly. Of course, sometimes there is real judgment and this helps no one.

¹⁷⁰ In *Man's Search for Meaning*, Victor Frankel recounted his experiences in a Nazi prisoner of war camp. While in the camp, he discovered that the mind and not the wire was what made one a prisoner. That same principle applies to us whether we are in a real prison or a metaphorical one we create for ourselves.

¹⁷¹ John 8:32.

¹⁷² A recent article in *The Atlantic* magazine examined the consequences of sex among college students when love is not present: <http://www.theatlantic.com/sexes/archive/2013/05/is-sex-still-sexy/275936/>.

¹⁷³ One of my sins was an addiction to the things of this world. I was as far from an ascetic as you can get, and my ability to acquire was limited only by my resources. Even though I knew that things never satisfied me for long, I always wanted the next new thing. It did not matter whether it was a car, a piece of exercise equipment, or the latest technological gadget. This was just another hell I had created for myself in my quest not to look.

¹⁷⁴ We have seen in the televangelical world what happens when some religious people promised material wealth to those who gave to their cause. This is another example of how Lucifer can twist our love for others into hurting everyone involved.

¹⁷⁵ The financial crisis of 2008 should demonstrate beyond question that Lucifer controls our monetary and economic systems. God is not part of anything controlled by greed or fear.

¹⁷⁶ Matthew 22:21.

¹⁷⁷ Exodus 32.

CHAPTER 12: MY CONTINUING JOURNEY

¹⁷⁸ Since humanity has inhabited this Earth, people have either “climbed” or gone “into” Mother Earth in an attempt to feel God’s grace and communicate with the Holy Spirit. Some cultures traditionally climbed mountains or built mounds in an attempt to get closer to

Heaven, while others constructed holes in Mother Earth or utilized caves in an attempt to be surrounded by what is of God during prayer. Everyone can have this same experience at any location whenever he or she prays and follows the rules laid down by The Christ.

¹⁷⁹ Mark 10:52.

¹⁸⁰ The original Hebrew for the term Holy Spirit is “Ruach Hakodesh,” sometimes translated as Divine Inspiration. A parallel term is Indwelling of the Shekhinah (the “Feminine” Divine Presence).

¹⁸¹ The Great Commission is set forth at Matthew 28:16-20: *Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain where Jesus had promised them to be. And when they saw him, they worshipped him. However, some of them had mixed feelings. And Jesus came near and spoke to them, and told them, “All power in heaven and earth has been given to me, and where my father sent me, I too send you. Go therefore teach all the nations, and baptize them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit, And teach them to observe everything I commanded you, and behold I am with you all the days, until the end of the universe, amen.”*

¹⁸² While in Israel, I was invited to attend a Jewish wedding. It was wonderful to feel the joy expressed by all in the dancing and singing that were part of the ceremony and the post-wedding celebration. One aspect of the ceremony that moved me was the blessing of Sheheyanu. This blessing involved thanking God for having given the groom and the bride life and existence and having brought them to this particular point in time. (This blessing is a way of being made aware of this special moment in time and is recited to mark achievement, acquisition, and meaning.) In this life, we can become fixated on an end point and miss the journey. This blessing brought to my mind the importance of remembering to thank God for everything we experience along our path versus a particular outcome.

¹⁸³ *Yerushalayim* (the Hebrew name of the city) means City of Peace. Etymologically, it comes from two words: *Ir* and *Shalem*. *Ir* means city and *Shalem* comes from *Shalom*, peace. The word *Shalem* comes from the word to complete, or to perfect. *Shlaimut* in Hebrew, is to fulfill

oneself, to achieve a level of completion in one's life. Jerusalem is the City of Completion. The Hebrew word Ir comes from the root "to wake up" So, Jerusalem -- *Ir/Shalem* -- is a place to *wake up to peace*, an inner peace. Jerusalem is mentioned 632 times in the Bible. The first hint of Jerusalem is assumed to be Genesis 14:18 with the mention of Malchizedek, king of Salem, "priest of El Elyon (God Most High)." In the Book of Joshua the king of Jerusalem allied himself with four other kings against the Israelites. Joshua refers to the city as Jebus, i.e. inhabited by Jebusites. After King David's conquest of Jerusalem in about 1004 BCE, Jerusalem became the official royal residence and the capital of the new monarchy. King David brought the Ark of the Covenant and his son, King Solomon, erected the Temple on the site that was identified as Mount Moriah (II Chronicles 3:1). Jerusalem thus became the spiritual center of the Jewish people, "the chosen place" foreshadowed in the Pentateuch.

¹⁸⁴This is what Jesus said as recorded at John 17:11-23: *And from now on I will not be among the people and [yet] these will be among the people. And [as] I come to you, Holy Father, protect them by your name, That which you gave me so that they may be one, just like Us. As I was with them in the world, I protected them by your name. These whom you gave me I protected. And not one of them was lost, Except the son of destruction, that came to finish [the prophesy of] the Scripture. Now that I am coming to you and these [things] I have spoken among the people, So that my joy may be fulfilled in them. I gave them your manifestation and the world hated them, for they were not from the world, Just as I am not of the world. It was not that I wanted you To take them out of the world, except to protect them against the evil one. For they were not of the world, just as I was not of the world. Father, bless them with your Truth, for your manifestation is the Truth. Just as you sent me into the world, I too sent them into the world. And in their sight I shall glorify myself, So that they too shall be glorified by the truth. And it was not for their benefit alone that I wanted [this,] Except also for the sake of those who believe in me Through their [own] manifestation. So that they all become one, Whereas you my father are in me and I in you, so also they in Us become one, So that*

the world may believe that you sent me. And I, the glory that you gave me, I give to them, To become one, just as We are One. I in them and you in me, so that they unite into one. And so that the world shall know that you sent me, And that you love them just as you loved me.

¹⁸⁵ Mathew 5: 43-45: *You heard it said, “Love your best friend and hate your enemy.” But, I am telling you, Like your enemy and bless those who curse you And do good to those who hate you and pray for those who exploit you and leave you bare; So that you become the sons of your heavenly Father, He who makes his sun shine on the good and the wicked, And brings down the rain on the righteous and the abominable.*

EPILOGUE:

A PLACE FOR ALL OF GOD’S CHILDREN

¹⁸⁶ John 20:25: *And the disciples told him, ‘We have seen our Lord.’ But he said to them, “If I do not see the scars in his hands and lay my fingers on him and place my hand on his side, I will not believe it.”*

¹⁸⁷ John 20:29.

Works Cited

- Avatar*. DVD. Directed by James Cameron. Beverly Hills, CA.: 20th Century Fox Home Entertainment, 2010.
- Richard Bach and Russell Munson. *Jonathan Livingston Seagull*. London: Pan, 1972.
- Richard Bach. *Illusions: The Adventures of a Reluctant Messiah*. New York: Dell Publishing, 1989.
- Broderick, Robert C. *The Catholic Encyclopedia*. Nashville: T. Nelson, 1976.
- Copernicus, Nicolaus, and Charles Glenn Wallis. *On the revolutions of the celestial spheres; the first translation into this language of De revolutionibus orbium caelestium; (from the text of the edition published by the Societas Copernicana at Thorn, 1873)*. Annapolis: St. John's Bookstore, 1939.
- Copernicus, Nicolaus. *De revolutionibus orbium coelestium, Libri VI* ["Six books on the revolutions of the celestial spheres"]. Oakland, Calif.: Octavo, 1999.
- Durling, Robert M., and Ronald L. Martinez. *The Divine Comedy of Dante Alighieri*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1996.
- Fanning, Steven. *Mystics of the Christian Tradition*. London: Routledge, 2001.
- Finding Forrester*. DVD. Directed by Gus Sant. Los Angeles, CA: Sony Pictures Entertainment, 2000.

- Flavius, Joseph. *The Antiquities Of The Jews*. Translated by William Whiston. Radford, Va.: Wilder Publications, 2009.
- Frankl, Viktor E. *Man's Search for Meaning: an introduction to logotherapy*. 4th ed. Boston: Beacon Press, 1992.
- Funk and Wagnalls Standard College Dictionary*. New York: Funk & Wagnalls Co., 1977.
- Gladiator*. DVD. Directed by Douglas Wick. Universal City, CA: DreamWorks Home Entertainment, 2003.
- Jaynes, Julian. *The Origin of Consciousness in the Breakdown of the Bicameral Mind*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 2000.
- Kastleman, Mark B. *The Drug of the New Millennium: the brain science behind internet pornography use, 3 power principles guaranteed to protect your family*. Orem, Utah: Power Thinking Publishing, 2007.
- Ketcham, Katherine, and William F. Asbury. *Beyond the Influence: understanding and defeating alcoholism*. New York: Bantam Books, 2000.
- Lewis, C.S. *The Weight of Glory and Other Addresses*. San Francisco, CA: HarperSanFrancisco, 2001.
- Lewis, C. S. *The Great Divorce: a dream*. San Francisco: HarperSanFrancisco, 2001.
- Nutt, David. "Drug Harms in the UK: a multicriteria decision analysis Drug harms in the UK: a multicriteria decision analysis." *The Lancet* 376, no. 9752 (2010): 1558-1565.
- Origen. *On First Principles*. Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock Publishers, 1973.
- Piper, Don, and Cecil Murphey. *90 Minutes in Heaven: a true story of death & life*. Grand Rapids, Mich.: Revell, 2004.

Star wars. DVD. Directed by George Lucas. Beverly Hills, Calif.: 20th Century Fox Entertainment, 2004.

Viola, Frank, and George Barna. *Pagan Christianity?: exploring the roots of our church practices*. Carol Stream, Ill.: BarnaBooks, 2008.

What Dreams May Come. DVD. Directed by Vincent Ward. Universal Studios, Calif.: Polygram Video, 2002.

Williamson, Marianne. *The Gift of Change: spiritual guidance for a radically new life*. San Francisco: HarperSanFrancisco, 2004.

Young, William P. *The Shack: Where Tragedy Confronts Eternity*. Newbury Park, Calif.: Windblown Media, 2007.

